

A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

FOR USE IN SCHOOLS

RY

FREDERIC SWANN

2 NO AR OF EIGHT COLLIGH IL MOON OF THE INNER TENTIN, RARRISTEN ATHLAW FORMERLY HEADMANER OF THE GRANNAN ECHOOL INCLEY

LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO
19 PATERNOSTER ROW, LONDON
NEW YORK, LONEAY, AND CALCUTTA

1913

A l'eighte ettermed

TO

THE THREE Ms

AND TO ALI OTHER CHILDREY
FORDWAYS IN HAVE I DEEK BORY INTO

THE CHILDREN'S CENTURY

AND

TO THE PAJOYARYT OF THE RIGHTS AND PRIVILEORS OF

BRITISH CITIZENSHIP

PREFACE The cultivation of good currenship provides common

ground upon which all sections of the community can

meet Litzunship is not for a moment to be confused or identified with the cospel of the drum and the trumpet, or with the glorification of ones flag and country. Lather, is it a reasoned appointment to complicated for young minds to grasp—of the system of government under which we live and of those institutions which are part of our national life. It must also treat of the problems which the rising generation will have to face when they arrive

at manhord and womanhood and of the general principles upon which there problems seem likely to be solved. Above all, the inculcation of citizenship must enforce the

preamount duty of every person to engage in some form of social service in the broadest sense of the term "Each for all and all for each must be the keynote of its traching Good citizenship is the fulfilment in the practical affairs of everyday life of ones duty towards one a neighbour

In these days when the weakening of Authority and of the ancient Sanctions has left many without compact on the ocean of life it is hoped and believed that in the after to become good citizens and in the desire to promote the welfare of the State may be found a plain good to right action. It is the externance of most levibles that

certain intellects are open to the appeal of humanity which would be closed to a simple imperative. Many people of this turn of mind become ardent advocates of, and workers for, the improvement of the lot of their fellows, and although their action may be based upon moral mather than religious grounds, the good citizenship of such men and women cannot be questioned. Winstever their motives may be, they are working for the good of humanity, and the world is better for their presence.

Certain difficulties beset the path of the writer upon Güzenship. He may deviate too far into pure Constitutional History, or Political Economy, whilst again, in another direction, he may be tempted into the domain of pure Ethics. To avoid superfluous digression into subjects touching so closely upon, and in parts overlapping, the borders of Güzenship, is not easy, and the author may himself be an unconscious tunagressor.

In laying out the scheme of these chapters, he has endeavoured first of all, to describe in terms fitted to the youthful mind, the main features of our ancient Constitution. Starting from the King as the historic and central figure of our national history, he has briefly followed the growth of Representative Government through Parliament down to the recently created Local Councils. Any method of explaining our system of Government by starting from the Parish Council-the youngest, smallest and least familiar unit-and building up the structure through the Local Councils, to Parliament, and the Throne, is a reversal of historic sequence, and would render the task more difficult by reason of the fact that no satisfactory treatment of the functions of the Local Councils is possible without constant reference to the central institution-Parliament-to which they owe not only their creation, but from which they also derive all their powers.

Technical terms have been sparingly used throughout the early chapters, but where necessary—and the language of parliamentary procedure abounds in quant and uncent words and phrases—their meaning is made [lim by the context

The last five chapters attempt to place before the read r some account of the social referris of recent years, and of the problems which still awar solution. The underlying purpose of this portion of the book is to arouse in joing and eiger minds in enthusiasm for great causes, and a resolution to play the part of a good citizen in furthering all work that has for its object the ruising of the level of our time life.

At the end of each chapter has been idded a series of questions for discussion and research. Many of these questions are double sepond the capacity of schoolbeys and schoolgris but they may perhaps serve to stimulate inquiry among the cofolder years into whose hands the book may fall. Most of the questions may be snawored by reference to such useful handbooks as "Whitakers Almanack", 'Harell's Annual, 'The Statesman's Year Book, "The Annual Charities Register and Digust', and the Year Books issued by certain of the London daily papers. The latest edition (11th) of the "Encyclopedia Britannica," may also be consulted with advantage. Most, if not all, of the foregoing will be found among the books of reference in my Free Library.

No attempt has been made in this "Primer of English Chiracolop" to deal with the differences—and they are numerous—between the Lyal, ecclesistical, and educational systems, and social problems of England and the of Scotland and Ireland. Although there is much that is common to all phases of British Citizenship, there are characteristic distinctions in the different parts of

the Kingdom sufficient to demand separate treatment. Editions specifically adapted to Scotland and Ireland are, therefore, under consideration.

The author's grateful thanks are due to many friends for advice and invaluable assistance rendered in the preparation of certain chapters of this book.

He must in particular acknowledge his indebtedness to the following gentlemen, all of whom have been good enough to allow the author to draw upon their wide and expert knowledge in various departments, viz. Viscount Tiveston; C. Courtenay Hodgson, Eeq., Clerk of the Peace, Clerk of the County Council, and Secretary to the Education Committee of the Cumberland County Council; E. Lewis Thomas, Esq., K.C.; F. C. H. Sinclair, Esq., Barrister-at-Law; Captain Hugh F. Sinclair, R.N.; Ceptain A. J. H. Byrne, 3rd Battaion King's Regiment, late 3rd Dragoon Guardis; H. Ward, Esq., and I.L. S. Lloyd, Esq., H.M. Inspectors of Schools; and last but not least, W. Harbutt Dawson, Esq., whose works dealing with social questions both in this country and Germany, have won the widest recognition and respect.

In a series of chapters touching upon so many sides of our social, industrial, and civic life, as well as upon the law and its practice, there are plentiful opportunities for making general statements, which, by reason of their inevitable exceptions, lay themselves open to challenge. At the same time a sincere effort has been made to secure an accurate presentation of the facts, and it is hoped that any errors that may be detected are of a minor character. The author has endeavoured to give effect to the kindly, and sometimes searching criticisms made by many of the above-nemed, who have read the Chapters whilst in MS. Without their illuminating guidance, he would escarcely have ventured to place this little work before the public.

Whilst thus acknowledging their welcome help, it must be clearly understood that the writer alone is responsible for all its faults and shortcomings

Any corrections or suggestions that may appear to add to the usefulness of the look will be gladly received and acknowledged by the author

F S

5. Fig Task Count The Temple London F.C. July 1911

NB—The type in which the following Chip'ers are granted has been chosen an accordance with the recommendations of the Commutes of the British Association argumet 3 to inquire and the Influence of School Boots on Fyeight.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

	1 401
The Loral Toa.*	1
autoc soy a d Perrocra.y	و
Limited Monaral v	3
One Lu One Flag	
Representing the Nation	ō
	5
The Preroga tvo of Mer y	6
Social Influence of the Thretie	7
The Lountain of Iton 12	-
QUESTITES	6
OHAPTER II	
Parentary	
The General Plection	S
The Polling Station	10
Counting the Votes	
Declaration of the Poll	11
Secret Voting. The Balet	19
	13
Who are the total	24
Manhood Suffrage	1.
Women and the Vote	15
Gagmanna	16
CELEVAL VI	
Chaptle III	
LARLIAMENT (Continued)	

17 19

13

17

Appointing Ministers The Prime Minister

The Forum Min ter

International 4rb trat on

xiv	CONTENTS
1	

QUESTIONS. . .

Pà-	BLIAMENT (Continued)								•					
	mi- Classic (Obligation													PAGE
	The Chancellor of the Es	toì	ıegı	aer	•		•		•	٠				20
	The Home Secretary		•		•	•	٠		•	•		٠	*	21
	The Lord Chancellor			•	٠		•		•	٠	,			22
	Other Ministers The Cabinet Offices of Profit		•	•		•						٠	٠	23
	The Camper		•	•	٠		•	٠		٠				23
	Ollices of Profit			•	•	٠	•	٠		•	٠			24
	Government Buildings The Civil Service QUESTIONS		•	•		•	٠	•						25
	The Civil Service			•			٠		٠					26
	QUESTIONS		•	•	•	•		,	٠	•	•	٠	•	27
,	O1	Æ	ΙP	ΤE	R	IV	ī							
PA	RIJAMENT (Continued)													
	Opening of Parliament.	K	ing	's S	pae	ch								28
	The Labours of the Sessi	011	_								ï		ì	29
	Logislation and Adminis	re	tio	a									ì	31
	Control of the Executive													81
	Voting Supplies													32
	Payment of Members .												·	88
	Payment of Members											·		
	Liberals and Conservative The Government "Policy The "Parliamentary Man	es												35
	The Government " Police	,,,												86
	The " Parliamentory May	h	ne	11								-		36
	Party Government									i			:	88
	The Majority rules													39
•	The Majority rules QUISTIONS						•				•	•	:	39
	QUESTIONS,		•	•		•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	••
	C	H.	ΔP	TE	\mathbb{R}	γ								
PA	REIAMENT (Concluded)													
	The House of Lords													41
	Scottish and Irish Peers													42
	The Lord Chancellor aga	m												42
	Degrees of Rank Lords as Legislators Altoring the Constitution Reform of the House of 1													44
	Lords as Legislators													45
	Altering the Constitution		TŁ	o F	arl	iam	ent	Ac	t					47
	Reform of the House of I	Jo:	cds											49
	The Two-Chamber System	21											ı	50
	Five-Year Parliaments									÷				50
	Omninotent Parliament .								٠					51
	Foreign Parliaments.		,											53
	Foreign Parliaments. The Privy Council													54

CONTI NTS	7.4
CHAPTER VI	
Tue Town Council	71.SY
The Mayor	56
Aldermen and Councillors	ที
Preserving the Peace The Police	ž9
Lighting Paving, and Cleansing	61
Water and Health	61
Byo-laws	63
Other Duties of the Town Council	(3
Munic pai Trading	U
The Mayor is a Magistrate The Town Clerk	64
The Rates	۵
Ones-04s	00 88
4012 010	CO.
CHAPTER VII	
COUNTY AND OTHER COUNCILS	
The Urban Dur'rict Council	63
Rural District Councils	\$0
The Parisl. Council	"1
Overseets of the Poor	72
Oli Tima Figures	73
The Tithes	74
The County Councils	75
How elected	76
Some of their Duties More and more Duties	77
lates sonin	77
A Citizen a Opportunities	7.7
Garantoza Garantoza	60
ata kindinin sarat	
OHAPTER VIII	
Bates and Takes	
Why polester	R1
The lates	82
The Poor Law	H3
Ti e Guarfiare	61
The Loar Listo	13)

CONTENTS

RATES AND TAXES (Continue	.h											
												PLOE
Inequality of the Rotes . Other Rates	•	•	٠	٠	•	•	•	٠	•	٠	٠	89
The Taxes	•	•	•	•	•							89
Income Tax	•	•	٠			٠		•	•	٠	٠	91 91
Direct and Indirect Taxes	٠	••	•	•	٠	•	•	•	•	•	٠	
Effect of Taxes		•	٠	٠	•	•	•	•	•	•	٠	92 93
Customs and Excise	٠	•	٠	•	•	•	•	٠	,	,	•	99
Taxation and Representati		•	•	٠	٠	•	•	•	•	٠	٠	
QUESTIONS.	юц	•	•	•	•	•	•	٠	,	٠	,	95 96
Quantings	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	30
CHAPTER IX												
COURTS AND JUDGES												
The Common Law												9B
Equity. Court of Chance	rtr	•	•		•		•	:				101
Court of King's Bench .	~3	•	•	•	•	•	•			:		108
Itinorant Justices	•	•	•		•	•	•	•	•	•	٠	104
The Judges	•	•	•	•	•	•			•	•	•	
Barristers and Solicitors										:		
The Law Courts												
The Courts of Appeal . County Courts	·	Ċ	i	Ċ	:		Ċ	Ċ	ì	ì	Ċ	108
Petty Sessions	·	Ċ	Ċ	i	Ċ	ì		ì		Ċ	:	109
Diagram showing relation												
QUESTIONS												
402020000	•			•	•			Ĺ				
Œ	[AT	TI	ır	X								
a		71										
Courts and Judges (Contin												
Justices of the Peace .											•	
Quarter Sessions		٠			٠		٠	٠	٠	٠	•	114
The Jury-Petty and Gra												115
The Strong Arm of the La	W			٠	•	٠	٠	٠	٠	٠	٠	117
Special Constables												
The Coroner's Court												
At a Oriminal Trial		•	•	•	•	-	٠		•	•	٠	119
A Civil Action ,				•	٠		٠	•	•	•	,	121
A Writ	٠	٠		٠	٠	•	٠	*	٠	•	•	122
Subsequent Steps in the	letic	m			٠	•	•	٠	٠	•	٠	128
The Triel		•			•	•	٠		•	*	,	123 121
Questions		•		٠	٠	٠	٠	٠	٠	•	٠	121

CONIFNTS	ANII
OHAPTLE M	
SOIDIFRS AND SAILOPS	Page
The British Navy	126
How the Navr is managed	1,4
Officers and Men	110
The Dritish Army	131
The Army Council	183
The Regulars	135
The Territorials	18
Boy Socues	188
The hailonal Flag	140
The Ethics of War	141
Queetions	113
CHAPTLE XII	
SCHOOLS AND SCHOLAPS	
Barly Lducational Efforts	164
Brit sla a d hat onal Echools	14*
Ragged Schools	147
Before 18 0	145
1870-1902	110
Inspectors and the Gode	151
School Age Half Timers	152
F vaning Schools	153
Teachers an I Training Colleges	Iul
Quzations	155
•	
CHAPTER XIII	
Schools and Scholars (Continued)	
I ndowed Schools	157
Higher Grade and other Schools	160
The Universities	161
Technical Education	163
Hodern Languages	166
The Polytechnics	168
The Educat onal Ladder	171
A Little Hemily	1.3

Quesmous

CONTENTS

CHAPTER XIV

THE STATE AND THE CHE	m												
The Child-Worker													PAGE
Bofore 1832	•	•	٠	•	•	٠	٠					•	176 176
1833 and onwards	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•			٠	
1878	•	•	•		٠	٠	•	•	•	•		٠	
1878	•	•	•	•	,		•	•					
Recent Legislation	٠	٠	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	٠	•	•	101
A Retrospect and a Pro-	•	nt.	,	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	104
The Children's Charter	3FO	00	٠	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	109
Ohild-Welfare Societies	•	•	,	•	•	•	•	•	,	٠	•	•	100
Junior Advisory Commi	if.ka	ec.	•	•	•	٠	•	•	,	•	•	•	100
Other Voluntary Agenci	ios		•	•	•	′	•	•	•	•	•	•	180
The Poor Year Child		•	•	•	•	•	•		•	•		•	101
The Poor Law Child . Questions	٠	•	•	•	•	•	•		•		•	•	100
402020010. , . ,	•	•	•	•	•	•	٠	٠	•	•	٠	٠	200
C	H.	AP	ΤE	R	Х	V.							
THE STATE AND THE CHIE	D	(Co	nti	่าน	cd)								
The Juvenile Offender													195
The Bad Old Times .	•	•	ì	•	•	•	•	•	•		•	•	196
Transportation			Ċ		•	:			•		•	•	
Transportation Slow Improvement .	Ċ		1			•	Ì	Ĭ.	•	•		•	198
The New Era	•					Ċ		•	•	•	•	•	200
The New Era Children's Courts				Ċ		Ċ		Ċ	•		Ī	Ċ	201
Industrial Schools and	Rei	form	nat.	rio	٠.		Ī		Ċ	•	Ċ	Ì	203
Borstal Institutions .					٠.	Ċ	Ċ	Ċ	:		Ċ		205
Decrease of Crime .	Ċ		. *	Ċ	Ċ		į			Ċ		i	
QUESTIONS				į,	٠.		Ċ				Ċ		207
		-								•	·	•	
and the same of th		730	***	_		**							
	II.B	PI	. 121	li.	ĂΊ	٧Ł							
Masters and Men													
Trade Unions												•	209
The Aim of the Unious		٠		٠.		,		,				٠	213
"Industrial Warfaro" Conciliation and Arbitra Waga Boards	٠			•		١.			*		٠		215
Conciliation and Arbitra	atic	u,											216
Waga Boards						•	٠				٠	•	217
Employers' Liability National Health Insura Further Problems			•						•				218
National Health Insura	nce	В					•	*	٠		•	•	219
Further Problems .				٠	٠	,	٠	٠	٠	٠	٠	•	221
Socialism. Collective	Эm	rora	hip			٠		٠	٠				222
Queerions		٠			٠	•	,	•	٠	٠		•	224

CHAPTER XVII

I JOUAN AND THE I MEIN	170#
The White Man . Burden	23
The Deminions is and the Seas	220
Canada	210
Australia	231
New Zealand	233
South Ainca	233
India	234
British Rule Justified	237
l gypt	50.7
Crown Colonies ate	211
Importal Craft rences	219
Committee of Imperial Pelan (213
Imperial Preference	244
Progration and Immigration	21.5
A Priceless Invitege	213
Questions	251
CHAPTER XVIII	
THE COMPLETE CITICES	
The Young Citizen	253
Formation of Character	254
The Body the Temple of the Mind	255
Sail I duestion	257
Hal Lies	259
"Namers makyth Man	2.9
Compulsory and Voluntary Duttes	200
Citizens Busy, Sick, or Apathe to	252
Your Dobt to your Country	203
Thrift	261
Wealth and Citizenship	265

QUESTIONS.

OHAPTER T

HIS MAJESTI THE KING

THE LOYAL TOAST

WHENFIER and wherever British subjects assemble together at political meetings whether in the Homekard or in the remotest corner of the Colonics it is a very award eastern before separating to join together in anguing the National Anthem—"God save the King

At every public banquet also, even in the most distant portion of the Empire it would be looked upon as a strange and discourteens thing were the loyal treet of 'The Aing' for any reason emilited Upon all such hospital to eccasions, it is usual for the Chairman to had the goasts fill their glasses and to propose in a few simple words the health of His Majesty. Every one then ress to his feet and drinks the teast with heavity acclamation. When speaking of this ancient custom his us remember that His late Majesty, King Edward VII., ever thoughful of his people, caused it to be made known that he would feel himself past as trul, knowned were the loyal teast taken in water, thus removing for all time a difficulty felt by many total abstances.

In rendering our homege to the Soven quaint and time honoured fashion, we are expressing our allegiones to his person, but emphasising the fact that the "Crown" is the coping stone of the whole fabric of the Constitution. 'By the Constitution is meant that elaborate system of institutions, laws, and customs under which we live and by which we are governed. In drinking the health of the King, we are acknowledging him as the head of the State, and therefore its greatest and most important servent.

You have learnt in your histories that the English King no longer wields the despotic powers that he possessed in times long past, but that he rules in accordance with the will of the people as expressed in the laws made by Parliament.

AUTOGRACY AND DEMOCRACY

A ruler whose will is law is called an autograt, and the government of his country is spoken of as an autocracy. Where, however, a country is governed by laws made in an assembly to which the people send representatives. where in short you find "government of the people, for the people, by the people," there you have a pure democracy (from the Greek word demos, meaning the people). Our Government is not a pure democracy. because, although the King is no longer a law giver, he still has certain powers of which we shall shortly speak. They are not very great. Little by little Parliament has placed checks and limits upon the prerogative of the Crown until it may now be said that the King "reigns hat does not rule." You ought to read in your English History how the long struggle against absolute monarchy was continued for centuries, beginning with the list of concessions, embodied in the Magna Charta, wrung from · King John. This document which has been described as

"the Keystene of Loglish Liberty," was the first actual limitation of the Royal Prerogative. Inch by inch the powers, rights and prerogative of the Crown have been curtailed, until to-day there remains little but their outward form. It is true that the Acts of Parliament still require the Royal Assent, before they become Law (p. 37). We know, however that the hing never refuses his assent whin Parliament disares it. We still also speak of the King, summoning Parliament, or "dissolving" it, but again we know that he does these things upon the processes beyond doubt the right to dismiss Parliament when he pleases and to declare war upon a foreign nation, and to purdon any cruminal yet we know full well that the Soverign never exercises these prerogatives except under the advice of his Ministers.

Indeed, much trouble and disorder would arise were the King of his own authority to automon and dissolve Parliament after the abrigat manner of Charles I, or mere he to declare war upon some other nation without first consulting his Ministers.

LIMITED MONARCHY

You see, therefore, that the Monarch of this Realm has been hedged about with many restrictions so that his powers though very great in name, are really very limited in reality. That, then, is why we speak of our Government as a "limited Monarchy," and the King as a "Constitutional Monarch". And since the King cannot rule just as he pleases, but must set in all public concerns as his Ministers advise, it follows that he must not be blaned if such Acts are displeasing to the people The Ministry alone is responsible. The people can show

their displeasure by turning the Ministers out at the next General Election. The King knows no party. The King is nowadays raised quite above party strife. He is neither Whig nor Tory, Liberal nor Conservative. It was not always thus, But during and since Queen Victoriae long reign, our Sovereigns have with great wisdom, shown no bias to the one side or the other in politica, and it is now an accepted rule that the Crown must not be drawn into the arean of political warfare. This impartial attitude of the Ruling Monarch enables all of us, whatever our particular shade of political opinion, to bury our differences, and unite in loyal adherence to the Throne. This it is, too, that enables every one to join with autmost cordiality in drinking to the health of "His Maiesty, the King."

You may now perhaps begin to ask what rommant of power is still left to our Sovereign, if he is obliged always to act in accordance with the advice of his Ministers. Some people will go so far as to tell you that we might just as well have a Republic, like France or America, with no King at all, as have one whose prerogatives have been reduced until they are almost annihilated. There are, however, very many great advantages in retaining; a permanent vevon though nominal head of the Government, in whose name all the business of the State is transacted, and who stands above and outside the party condict. It provides a check upon the inordinate ambition of any prominent politicism.

The mere existence of a ruler even with nominal powers only; renders it impossible in our country for any man, to attain a position of undue influence. That is a fact of which you may have thought little; but is nevertheless of great importance. There are many ofluer good reasons which you may think out for yourself, for retaining

a Sovereign with prerogatives rarely used but still existing

OVE KING, ONF FLAG

The fact that the same flag floats over us all, and that the same King rules over every part of the Empire, is a thought very dear to loyal citizens in the Colonics and Dominions beyond the Seas No temporary President could ever fill the same place in the heart and imagina tion of those who dwell far away from England as that occupied by a Sovereign whose ancestors have for ages held the throne. Each of us is governed to some extent, by sentiment and our feelings of deep loyalty and rever ence could never be the same towards some fellow citizen however distinguished, who for a short space of time was holding the foremost position in the State. The King therefore, as the hereditary monarch, provides in his person a visible bond between British subjects all the world over a bond that will never be broken as long as we are fortunate enough to have such admirable wearers of the Crown as the great and good Queen Victoria King Majestics, King George and Queen Mary

REPLESEVING THE NATION

It is because the Sovereign embodies in his own person all the attributes of the State that he can on great ceremonal occasions represent the Nation in a reanner that would be quite impossible for an uncrowned head. The Sovereign is so far lifted above all other men by his high hereditary rank that he can be invested with social power which it would be difficult to entrust to

6 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

an ordinary citizen or to the temporary President of a Republic. It was in his capacity as the representative of the whole Empire that King George appeared at the great Durbar at Delhi, in December, 1911, where he received the homage of the Native Princes of India. The King, on that impressive occasion, in reality personified the objects and aims of British rule in India.

When also the Sovereign makes visits of ceremony to the monarchs of other countries, he goes not simply as an illustrious private person, but as the ambassador of the whole nation, to convey to the foreign ruler the goodwill of the inhabitants of this country. That in itself is a great office, which it is well should be performed by one who is above party ties, and beyond the reach of party politics. The more you think of this the more you will realise the value of the kingly office in our relations with foreign countries,

THE PREROGATIVE OF MURCY

Coming back once more to the powers that are still inherent in the Sovereign, we find that the King holds in his hands what is known as the "prerogative of meroy." There is no criminal so vile or base that the King could not, perdon him. At time of great national rejoicing, it is customary for the King to display his elemency by releasing some prisoners and by shortening the sonteness of others. But even in these cases, although the King could do all this of his own authority, he usually seeks the advice of his Ministers before exercising this truly Royal prerogative.

SOCIAL INFLUENCE OF THE THEONE

There is another inalienable prerogative of the Crown, unlimited by statuto, and often abused in times pay Werefer, of course, to the moral influence which the Sovereign can exercise upon his people by setting an example to the whole of Society of right living and right doing Fortunte it is that for nearly a century the weight of the Throne has ever been east on the side of what is good That it may be always thus is the fervent wish of each of us when we raise our glass to the loyal toast of "The hing"

THE FOUNTAIN OF HONOLB

"The King is the bountain of Honour" By this is meant that he is able to lastow any title or other language distinction never say of his subjects. He could-il so he desired-rates a dustman to the rank of a dule. This tower of granting titles of nobility or of lower tank, is the greatest prerogative of our Sovereign By this means he rewards the statesmen and other servants of their country, to whom monetary rewards could not, and should not be offered as recompense. There are -as you will soon learn, if you do not already know it-cornies which every citizen may render to the community, which erunot be valued in pounds, shillings, and pence. The best work in this world is not that which is done for money Upon men and women who have performed some act of historia, or rendered great public service, the Soverign often confers some distinction, such as an order, or title, or medal When the King, as head of the State has deemed it proper thus to bestow some token of his approval, you may be quite sure that the recurrent

will be accorded by his or her fellow citizens a respect which is far more sincers than that which is given to those whose sole claim to distinction is the possession of vast sums of money.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCE

1. Give some explanation of the legal maxim that "the King can do no wrong."

2. Differentiate between the word "limited" as applied to a public company, and to the monarchy.

 Point out in English History instances of the limiting of the Royal prerogative.

4. Name the countries in Europe that have an autocratic form of Government, also those in both hemispheres that are Republican in form.

5. Give instances of political bias displayed by modern, sovereigns with special reference to Anne and George III.
6. Cite instances of public service for which money could

6. Ofte instances of public service for which money could be no reward.

7. Discuss in what manner loyalty can be displayed in a Republican State.

Republican State,

8. How would you provide for the award of honours
under a Republican form of Government?

CHAPTER II

PARLIAMENT THE GENERAL FLECTION

Most of you will remember the last election, and the str and turnoil with which it was attended. For week beforehand the rival candidates had been addressing meetings in your neighbourhood sometimes in public halls and sometimes out of doors and at street corners

meetings in your neignbourhood sometimes in public halls and sometimes out of doors and at street corners. Then came the actual day of the election. You will recall the scene outside the polling booth or station with all its fues and bustle. You saw large placends stating that this was the polling station for such a district, and no doubt, you recollect how the carriages and motor cars came dashing up and discharging their load of votors, who then disappeared within the station by one door, and after a little time respected at another. Perhaps you

red blue or orange as the case might be
Daring the course of the day the candidates them
solves may have driven up to learn how things were
going on Then you must have I rard how their supporters cherred them lustily, whilst their opponents
perhaps "loc-cel' or made some other agn of disapproval
These are common incidents at election times when parts
feeling runs high and when even undemonstrative people
often become quite evented and bustirous, you may have

noticed that the voters often were party colours or favours

noted also a few men around the entrance, very busily engaged in asking the voter his number which they promptly jot down in a notebook. Perhaps you saw that at intervals, messengers were sent with lists of these numbers to the "Committee Rooms" so that the canvassers may know who have voted, and who must still be hunted up and brought to the poll. For, as you no doubt observed on that memorable occasion, temporary offices were taken here and there in the town for the purposes of the election. These offices are the "Committee Rooms" of the candidates. They are occupied by the busy and eager canvassers and other voluntary workers who take upon themselves many voluntary services, especially that of bringing up the laggards who might otherwise either forget or neglect to register their votes. Naturally the workers at the Conservative Committee Rooms are Conservatives, and those at the Liberal Committee Rooms are Liberals.

And so the "fight" goes on all day from 8 a.m. until 8 p.m., when at the stroke of the clock the doors of the polling station are closed, and the man who arrives a moment afterwards—and there is generally a late-comer is received with jeering laughter by the crowd, as being just too late to record his vote!

THE POLLING STATION

Let us take a look inside the polling station or "booth" as it used to be called. It may happen that your own school was used for the purpose of a polling station, in which case you got a holiday, and therefore remember the event very clearly. One of the rooms is arranged with a central table, at which some clerks are sitting, and upon which is a big box strongly padlocked, and with a slit in the lid! This is the ballot low Round the walls are roughly constructed compartments provided with a ledge or shelf, and with a pencil attached to a string or chain. One or two policemen are always present to see that strict order is lept, and that no one attempts to open or destroy the ballot box or its contents As the voters enter they are directed, one by one, to the table where the clerk sits. He asks them their hame and address. Having satisfied himself that their names are in the list of voters, the clerk hands to each man a sirp of paper upon which are printed the names of the candulates in alphabetical order. The voter then retires into one of the compartments and puts a X against the name of the candidate whom he wishes to send to Parliment. The paper is then folded up tightly, so that no one can see where the X has been placed, and the voter returns to the table and slips his paper through the slit in the ballot hox. He then at once leaves the room by another door, and goes back to his work or his home. He has duly exercised his right and duty as a citizen in voting at a parliamentary election.

COUNTING THE VOTES

At 8 o'clock in the evening the voting stops, and the hallot box, laden with its papers, is carried to some central place, usually the Town Hall. The police generally accompany this box to its destination, so as to protect it from any clience of being lost or tampered with. At the Town Hall, awaiting the arrival of the ballot boxes, are a number of important officials—the Mayor (or the High Sheriff, if it is a county election) the Town Chrk, and a staff of cummentors to count the votes. As soon as the last of the ballot boxes has arrived from the furthest

polling station the doors are locked and the counting begins.

The ballot boxes are opened and the papers shaker out upon a big table. They are carefully sorted, and the number of votes for each candidate counted and checked with great accuracy. Ultimately it is discovered that one of the candidates has more votes than the other If the candidates "tie" the "Returning Officer" i.e. the Mayor (or Sheriff) gives a "casting vote."

DECLARATION OF THE POLL

When the exact numbers have been ascertained, the Mayor, attended by the candidates, advances to a windov overlooking the street, in which by this time a vas crowd is sure to have gathered. In a loud voice be declares that Mr. --- has obtained a majority of votes and is therefore returned to Parliament as member fo that constituency. The successful candidate, amid the frantic cheering of his supporters, thanks the voters fo the honour they have done him in giving him the majority of votes, and assures them that he will try hi best to serve his country and his constituents when he goes to the Parliament House. He also proposes a votof thanks to the Mayor (or Sheriff) for all the trouble he has taken as "Returning Officer," in making all the arrangements for the polling and counting of the votes.

The defeated candidate also says a few words, and i the "fight" has been fair and square as it should alway. be, the victorious and the vanquished candidates shake hands in front of the whole audience. This is a good Euglish custom which we should all try to maintain.

There is no dishonour in being beaten in a fair fight and whether it is in football or cricket or in politics, as honest rivalry should not be allowed to embitter personal intaitions. It is the part of a good citizen to learn how to nevert a defeat as well as to enjoy a victory. Aword small and mean personalities refrain from absence epithets learn to argue coolly and clearly give your opponent the credit for being as sincere in his beliefs as you are in yours, and you will earn the respect of these who differ from you. A calmly uttered statement of your political views carries for more weight with your hearers than hot words and foud bluster.

SECRET VOTING THE BALLOT

We may here note one or two things about the election Firstly the voting was performed in a secret manner, or by ballot." The compartment into which the voter retired was so constructed that no one could watch how he marked his paper, and he folded it up so tightly that no one could see the mark when he dropped it into the bullet box. And when ence it is in the box no one could tell at from any one else's paper The ballot is serret, and the reason why we have adopted in Great Britain and Ireland this sicret method of voting is because it gives every man freedom to express his real opinion at the critical moment of voting without any lear of being treated harshly by his employers or others who might hold different views. It was only in 1872 that secret voting was introduced into our land. Before that time the voter had to declare in pullic at the 'hustings' or open platform, the name of the candidate for whom he voted It took both moral and physical courage to go through this ordeal. It required moral courage, tecause an employer mucht threaten to deprive his men of their situations if they voted against his wishes. A man

would, therefore, often vote against his convictions under fear of losing his livelihood. Again, it required physical courage to vote for an unpopular candidate, for the mob round the hustings were not content simply to hurl abuse at the voter, but would often throw missiles at him. The present system of voting by ballot is a great advance upon the bad old order of things, which lent itself to much bribery and corruption. Votes were bought and sold quite openly, and the candidate with the longest purse would generally succeed in being elected. There exists still, no doubt, a small amount of bribery, but it is ineffective. Even if a man takes a bribe and promises to vote "the right way," it is impossible for the person who paid him to follow him into the polling booth, and see that he keeps his promise. This is one of the advantages of the ballot. It has made bribery useless,

WHO ARE THE VOTERS?

You may perhaps have asked yourselves: "Who are these voters, and how did they get the right to vote?" That is a very proper question, and one which you will be able to answer for yourself when you, have cred Chapter VIII. on Rates and Taxes. Meanwhile you can remember this, that every male person of over 21 years of age, who owns or occupies a house or other building (such as a shop) or land to a certain value, and who has paid his rates, is entitled to be put on the Parliamentary Register,—that is on the list of those who may vote at a Parliamentary Election. Male lodgers also, if they occupy rooms worth £10 yearly, can claim a vote.

The Overseers of the Poor, about whom we shall learn more in a later chapter, have to prepare the Register. Sometimes difficult questions arise as to whether a person is really entitled to the vote To settle mitters of this hature, a "Revising Rarrister" comes round every September and goes through the Register of Voters and hears claims and objections to this, that, or the other applicant being entered upon the Register, and then he decides the question. If any would be elector is struck off the Register or is not placed upon it when he thinks he has anoth thereto, he can appeal to the High Court in London, about which you will learn more in the Chapter on Courts and Judges

MANDOOD SULPLADS.

Up to the present time the vote is given upon a "property qualification," i.e the voter must on nor occupy land, or a house, or some other building which is "axessed to the poor rate" There is, however, among certain puliticians a desire to confer the suffrage, i.e the vote, upon all males of full age—and perhaps upon females also—whether they are ratepyers or not. This would be a very complete change in our system of voting, and would "enfranchise" (i.e would adant to the vote) inilions of people who are now vote-less. It may happen one long that this change in our Constitution will be made by Parlament. But at present the vote rests upon the ownership or occupation of land or buildings, and upon the payment of rates.

WOMPS AND THE VOTE

An observation you, no doubt, made for yourself during the election, was that no woman was allowed to enter the polling station. Women do not yet possess the right to vote for a Member of Parlament or, to use the

proper phrase, they do not yet possess the "parliamentary franchise." In a subsequent chapter you will learn that they may vote at the election of County Conneillors, and Town Councillors, but not as yet at a Parliamentary Election. You have heard and reed of the claims made by "Suffragists" and "Suffragottes" to be placed upon the same basis as men in respect to the parliamentary vote. Very many men and women think that if women pay taxes they ought to have a share in the management of the country just in the same way as men have. A large number of Members of Parliament have pledged themselves to do all they can to pass a law giving the vote to women on the same terms as it is given to men. It is possible and even probable that before you are much older you may see women entering the polling station and recording their vote in the manner already described.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

- What are By-Elections! When do they occur?
- 2. Should canvassing be abolished?
- Give examples of the way in which candidates sometimes seek to influence voters without resorting to actual bribery.
 - 4. Is it ever good citizenship to abstain from voting?
- 5. If women are admitted to the parliamentary vote is there anything to prevent them also "standing for Parliament"?
- 6. What is meant by Piural Voting? Discuss the questions of "one man one vote," and "one vote one value."
- 7. How far does the election of a town councillor differ in procedure from that of an M.P.?
 - 8 Who is the M P. for your town and division?

CHAPTER III

PARIJAMENT (Communed)

APPOINTING MINISTELS

Ann now let us suppose that a general election is over and that your fivourite party is in the majority, and that the whole of the 670 MP is are waiting to take their seats in the House of Commons. For two or three weeks the country has been in a state of turmoil, and people are anxious to settle down again to their business which in many cases has been upset by the fiversh unrest. In fact, so disturbing is a general election to the trade and commerce of the country, that it is suggested by many important lenders of industry that it would be well to have all the elections on the same day, and you may live to see this accomplished.

We next read in the newspapers that the King has sent for the leader of the successful party, and asked him to become Prime Minister and to "form a Ministry"— that is, to choose the men who are to occupy the great Offices of the State. There are many of these great offices to be filled. It would be too long to name them all, but you must know something about some of them There is to begin with, the office of the First Lord of the Tressury. The Prime Minister usually takes that for himself. The actual administrative work of the office is done by the Under Secretaries and subordinates, so as to

18 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

allow the Prime Minister time for the many other affairs that claim his attention.

THE PRIME MINISTER

The Prime Minister has a very laborious pest. He is at the helm of the Ship of State, and is responsible for all measures submitted to Parliament. He is in constant communication with the King in whose name all the affairs of the State are transacted, and who naturally. wishes to know of everything that takes place, and the reasons that actuate His Majesty's Ministers in any policy they decide to adopt. The Prime Minister has also to. make frequent public speeches to his supporters explaining the measures that his party propose to pass into law. At night he must be in his place in Parliament to take part in the debates. He must be a skilful and persuasive speaker, for upon critical occasions he may find that some of his own party are inclined to be rebellious and want him to act differently. Thus a Prime Minister has during the whole of his period of office, a heavy load of responsibility. For the time being he is virtually the ruler of the country, although, as you have already learnt, he does nothing in his own name, but always in the name of the King, or "with the authority of the Crown."

THE FOREIGN MINISTER

Next in importance to the Prime Minister comes the "Foreign Minister" or to give him his full title, "the Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs". He as responsible for the relations and dealings of our Government with foreign Governments, and were he not both tautful and

careful ho might involve us in war with another State No one in the Ministry has greater powers for good or iff than the Foreign Minister. He is in constant communication with the foreign ambiasadors.

Every civilised country appoints Ambissadors or Envoys—usually men of high social standing and will experience in political affurs—to represent their State in other lands. In London you will find ambassadors from every civilised nation similarly you will find His Britanno Muesty's ambissadors in Paris, Berlin, St. Petersburg. Vicina. Constantinople: Washington and elsowhere. The Livergia Minister is in touch with these girillonen and if any dispute arises between us and another country—say for instance—with Lussia—the Russian ambiased or and our Foreign Minister will try to settly the difficance peaceably. If, however, they are quite unal to adjust the matter by peaceful negotiations between the countries which they respectively represent, the dispute might have to be determined by force of arms, that is by war.

INTELNATIONAL ABSTRACTION

War is a terrible means of setting difficulties, and in recent times many troubles which in a former day would have led to war have been settled by "Arbitration There is now a Court which holds its meetings at The Higgso in Holland for this very purpose. It was established in 1899, and is composed of very eminent judges of all nationalities. If two countries have a dispute, say, about the boundaries of some of their colonial processing, about the boundaries of some of their colonial processing they need not light the question out with guns and sword, but may agree to salamit it to the Hagic Convention, and abide by the decision of the judges. Already

mmy such difficulties have been solved by this International Court of Arbiteation, and it is hoped that little by little, the gravest questions involving the national honour, or "territorial integrity" of a country may also be settled by this tribunal.

From what you have just read you will see how serious are the duties and responsibilities of the Minister who carries out the "foreign policy" of the Government, and how needful it is, therefore, for the King, under the advice of the Prime Minister, to choose for this office, a man whom both parties can trust. In negotiating with foreign countries we ought to be neither Liberals nor Conservatives. The good of the State should be the first thought, and should be placed above all the party considerations

CHANCELLOR OF THE EXCHEQUER

Next in importance to the Office of Foreign Secretary comes that of the Chancellor of the Exchequer. This Minister is usually distinguished for his skill in dealing with intricate questions of business and finance, inasmuch as he "holds the purse-strings" of the nation. The Chancellor of the Exchequer controls the national exponditure, and (of course with the approval of his colleagues) decides what amount of money shall be spent upon the Navy, the Army, Education, and so forth. Money must be raised for Old Age Pensions, and for Insurance against Sickness, and for very many other objects, such as for the salaries of the Judges and of Members of Parliament. To get this money, or Revenue as it is called, the Chanceller of the Exchequer depends upon the taxes, of which you will learn more in a future chapter. Every your—generally in April—the Chanceller lays before the

Horse of Commons a Statement called the "Budget," in which he sets forth the condition of the nation's finances. He tells how much the taxes have yielded, and how much he wants for the next twelve months to meet the estimated expenses. Sometimes he has to levy fresh taxes, and then you will hear on all siles complaints from people who have to pay more for their tea or sugar or beer or for any of those articles which are tixed by the State Sometimes the Chancellor of the Frehequer is in the happy position of having a 'surplus that is, of having more revenue than he expected and then he "remits ' or diminishes one or more of the taxes. The post of guardian of the nation's purse is therefore on of great responsibility If the revenue is spent in wasteful and harinful ways, or if unequal or unfair taxes ire levied up in the people the Chancellor of the Exchequer gets the blame and brings numerularity upon the whole Government, of which he is such an important member

THE HOME SECRETARY

Another Minister of whose work you should know something is the Home Secretary. He occupies what is known as the Home Office, and as his main indicates he is chiefly concurred with the interpal affures of the country. To the Home Secretary belongs the general administration of prisons reformatories industrial schools, and the lunatio asylums to which insome erminals are sent. The Home Office, of which his is the head, also sees that the laws regulating mines, quarries, factories, and workshops are duly carried out. For this purpose he appoints a large number of Inspectors who trivial about the country and report to the Home Office any cases in which they find the law his been broken. A vest number of other matters

come under the management of this Government Department, so that the Minister in charge of the Home Office has a very busy time. All those various Acts for regulating the employment of children, the hours of shop assistants, the protection of wild birds, the expulsion of undesirable aliens, the treatment of habitual drankards. etc., come within the province of the Home Office. Then, too, the Home Secretary is the medium of communication between the Crown and its subjects. All addresses and petitions to the Throne are presented by, and answered through the Home Secretary, who also advises the King in the exercise of the prerogative of mercy (see p. 6). It is on his recommendation that pardons and remissions of sentences are granted to convicted persons. Similarly, the Home Secretary recommends to the Crown the names of suitable persons for appointment to the positions of police magistrates, stipendiary magistrates and recorders, These are not nearly all the duties that are performed by the Home Office, but they will serve to show the wide character of the control exercised by this department over the national welfare.

THE LORD CHANCELLOR

One of the most responsible appointments that lies in the hands of the Prime Minister is that of Lord Chancellor, whose great and splendid and historic office will be described when we come to read about the House of Lords. Meanwhile, you may remember that the Lord Chancellor is the foremost member of the House of Lords, and during the tenure of his office is head of our judicial system.

OTHER MINISTERS

Many other ministerial offices have to be filled by the Prime Minister before he can be said to have complete l his task. Thus he must appoint a Minister for War to look after the army, a Minister called the "First Lord of the Admiralty who must answer for the efficient condition of the may, a Secretary for the Colonics, another Secretary for India another Secretary for Scotland, and a Lord-Incutenant of Incland. Then too a Postmaster-General must be appointed to the l'est Office, and Ministers also must be found to take charge of the Board of Linea tion, the Board of Trule and the Board of Agriculture, and the Local Covernment Board There are still others with high and important duties, for instance the Lord President of the Council, who, in the absence of the Sovereign, presides at the sittings of the Privy Council (see p 54)

THE CARRET

At last the Prime Minister has selected the men whom he thinks fittest for the tasks they will have to perform, and the Ministry is complete. Out of the whole number of Ministers some fifteen or twenty holding the most important offices form a group which is known as the Cabinet. It is regarded as a high honour to be offered by the Prime Minister a cost in the Cabinet. Taken altogether the Ministers are spoken of as The Government, for it is in them that the actual power resides, though, as will before, they do nothing in their own names, but always as the Ministers, it is servanted of the Crown. Thus mour Government we always keep up the appearance of Royal Authority, although the real power belongs to the

people themselves, and they entrust it temporarily to their representatives in Parliament.

The Ministers now waif upon the King of some convenient time, and go through the ancient ceremony of kissing his hand, and resolving from him their Seals of Office. The Great Seal of England with which Treaties, Acts of Parliament, etc., are sealed, is delivered into the keeping of the Lord Chancellor, who is frequently styled. "Keeper of the Great Seal."

OFFICES OF PROFIT

It would be a perfectly natural question for you to ask whether the Ministers receive payment for the very heavy work that is theirs when they "accept office"!
Yes, the post of a Minister is an "Office of Profit under the Crown." Ministers receive large salaries, often amounting to several thousand pounds a year, and in some cases also they have the use of a residence, conveniently situated near the Houses of Parliament, during their term of office. The Prime Minister's official address is at No. 10, Downing Street, whilst the Chancellor of the Exchequer is housed at No. 11.

You may be tempted to think that the salaries paid to Ministers are upon too lavish a scale, and that some may seek office simply for the sake of money. You must understand, however, that a man in the high position of a Minister is expected to show great hospitality to political visitors from the Colonies or abroad. Often the official salary is not more than sufficient to cover the cost of entertaining these nunerous and important guests. Unless, a man is already wealthy there are indeed some public offices which he could not county by reason of the great expenses attending their fulfilment. No money can buy

devotion to one's country. It is poor citizenship to pay meanly for services which cannot be estimated by a cash standard

At what price can you value the services of the poors private soldier or bluejacket who dies at his post? They have given something to their country worth more than gold. At what price would you fix the wisdom, skill, or courage of Pitt, of Nelson of Wellington, or of other famous Statesmen, Adunrals, and Generals who have swed their country's honour in times of national danger? Parliament sometimes makes to such men great presents of money, and the Sovereign honours them by conferring a title. but neither title nor money can either buy or pay for valour courage, statesmanship or generalship. Their true reward is in the gratuful thanks of their countrymen, and in the sense of duty well accomplished. Since money is a necessity let the great Othicas of the State be well i remunerated. We expect Ministers to give the very best that is in them to the cause of their country They should, therefore, be placed above the temptations that sometimes assail men of small means Beware of false economy Efficiency, though costly, is in the long run infinitely cheaper than mefficiency. This is a sound principle of citizenship which has been tested by long experience and found to be true

GOVERNMENT BUILDINGS

Many of you have visited London, and have doubtless walked down Whitchall, past the tall Lifeguards standing on sentry, and noted the splendid buildings to right and left. Confronting the spectator is the magnificiant pile of the Houses of Parliament with the Clock Tower and the Victoria Tower, and the stately mass of

CHAPTER TV

PARLIAMENT (Continuéd)

OPENING OF PARLIAMENT. KING'S SPEECH

Not will remember that we left the newly-elected members waiting to take their seats in the Parliament House whilst the Prime Minister was selecting colleagues to fill the great offices of State. These appointments have now been made, and the day fixed for the opening of Parliament arrives. The King generally arranges to

open Parliament in person.

Accompanied by the Queen, the King drives from Buckingham Palace in the State Ocach, and is received with great ceremony at the entrance to the House of Lords by the high dignitaries of State, clad in their sumptious robes of office. Proceeding to the House of Lords the King seats himself upon the throne. The Queen sits beside him. A messenger is then despatched to summon the Members of the House of Commons to hear the King's Speech.

As the House of Lords and the House of Commons are at opposite ends of a long handsome cognition, it occupies a little time for "Black Rod" (as the messenger-is quaintly styled), to accomplish his errand. Meanwhile the King and Quben and the whole assembly sit quited in their places. At lass, the Commons, headed by the Speaker, before whom is carried the great Mace, arrive,

and stand uncovered at the bar of the House whilst the King reads the Speech which is placed in his hands by the Lord Chancillor. This document contains the programme of the proposed measures about to be presented for the consideration of Parliament. It outlines in a general manner the labours of the coming Session Thou, he it is called the Kinga Speech it is in reality drafted by the Chinet, and submitted to the King for approval. The Speech always concludes with an invocation of the Draine blessing upon the labours of Parlia mint. After rading the Speech the King retires leading the Queen by the land.

The uncient dignified and picturesque ceremony of opening Parli iment heir, over the Commons hasten back to their own Chamber, and the work of Parliament legins in carnest. Perhaps a few members who have been detained in the country are waiting to take the Oath of Allegnance. These is a formality occupying but a few moments, but one novertheless of high importance. Indeed, a member may be heavily finel if he takes his seat and joins in the business of the House before having taken the Oath, or made an equivalent Affirmation.

THE LABOURS OF THE SESSION

Whilst reembers are assembling and exchanging friendly greetings and congratulations after the vices it tudes of the general election, we may consider for a moment the task to which these gentlemen are about to address themselves. They have come together as the chosen representatives of the nation to discharge ast duties and responsibilities. Upon their collective wisdom depends the welfare of the grantest empire the world has ever seen. Not only have they to look after the internal

affairs of England, Scotland and Ireland, but those also of India, and many of the colonies. The maintenance in an efficient condition of the Navy and of the Army ocenpies a large share of the attention of Imperial Parliament, whilst the commercial and political relations with other nations and with our self-governing colonies have also to be carefully considered. All manner of social questions, such as the education and the health of the young, unemployment, insurance against sickness and accidents, problems of trade and wages and the housing of the poor form part of their work. These are but a few of the imnortant subjects which claim the time and thought of our legislators, and you have only to look at the report of the proceedings of Parliament in the daily papers to see. for yourselves the infinite variety of other matters which come up before the House of Commons for discussion, and perhaps legislation. No tramway in the remotest corner of these islands, no drainage scheme, no railway extension, no harbour or dock construction, can come into existence without first obtaining the sanction of Parliament. Many of these affairs are of interest only to the people immediately concerned, and are carried through the House as "Private Bills." But even Private Bills have to go through just the same procedure as Public Bills, about which you will learn more in a few moments.

You will believe, therefore, that Parliament is an overworked assembly. It has really too much to do and toomany things to think of to do them all well and thoroughly. For this reason some people wish to set up subordinate Parliaments in Ireland, Sectland and Wales, which shall take part of the work off the shoulders of the Imperial Parliament. But as this is a subject over which party controversy waxes very warm, we must pass on and leave such questions as "Home Rule" for discussion elsewhere.

POITAITAIN DEL POITAINDE I

If you examine somewhat further into the labours of Inframent you will find that part of its work consists in making. Itwis and part in seeing that these laws are properly administered. Legislation or law making forms only a portion of the business of the House of Commons Much time is a cut by members in listening, to except about the way in which the law is being carried out. I very gravance of a public nature by it great or small is by ught before I inframent. If for instance the daught upon some new stain a displaces any member be will ask a question upon the subject and the Lostmaster Central will answer that question. If a number of members are dissuit fied a debate will take place upon the matter and privages some alteration in the design of the stain a will be 1 minsed. In the case of more senious growance a the Commonth will indertake to bring forward a new Bill to remody the trouble.

CONTROL OF THE PARCUTIVE

The Ministers who for the time being are at the leaf of the great Departments of State have to answer in Larhament for the good management of their departments. If anything goes very seriously wrong in any department the Minister in charge may be called upon to resign his office. Thus for example the Boord of Education I is to see that there is a Public I lementary. School within reach of every child in the langdom, and if any village were not supplied with a school you may be sure that a question would soon be asked in I arhament about in The Minister of Lalucation would then have to give some good reason why no school hid been supplied or le

would be blamed for not managing his department better. Not many years ago a Minister had to explain why there was not more condite in stock in the Government magazines, and as Parliament did not think the answer satisfactory the whole Government had to resign, a general election took place, resulting in the return of the opposite party to power. By such means as those above outlined, Parliament sees that great departments of the Government are properly managed.

Master this fact thoroughly, for it distinguishes our Parliamentary system from those of some other great nations. Parliament sot only controls ligislation, but

controls also the Executive.

VOTING SUPPLIES

It is hardly necessary to tell you that no taxes can be. levied without the consent of Parliament. "No taxation. without representation.". Simple and reasonable as this now seems to you, it took centuries for Parliament to wrench this valuable prerogative from the Crown. Read in your histories about John Hampden who refused to pay a tax levied by Charles I, without the consent of Parliament, and you will see with what cost and suffering our forefathers gained for us what we now regard as a most elementary right. With keen practical sense our ancestors realised that if Parliament secured control of the national purse, it could gradually enforce other rights, by the simple process of refusing to grant money to the King unless he ruled in accordance with the wishes of his people. "No supplies until grievances are redressed," was their maxim, and it is the working rule of Parliament to this day.

Unless Parliament annually votes the money to pay

for the Army, the Navy, for the Civil Service, for Education, Old Age Pensions for payment of the interest on the National Debt, etc. a chaotic condition of affairs would ensue So among its multifarious duties Parliament has to spend many days in the session in " voting supplies," as the old phrase calls it. When the House "goes into Supply," the Government asks for money for various purposes. Perhaps it is for the Navy, and the Government is proposing to spand several more millions upon the construction of battleships. A sharp discussion probably takes place before the money is voted. Some members say that the bovernment is asking too much and propose to cut down the expenditure. Others think it is not enough. Some assert that the money is not being spent to the best advantage, and entirese the Covern ment's action One of the effects of having too much work to do is that the time allotted for Supply is often too short for a full consideration of the Estimates and millions will be voted in a single afternoon without sufficient regard for economy

PUMENT OF MEMPERS

Up till lately the Members of Parliament received no salaries, and it was one of the sources of national pridthat there were among us a sufficient number of men who were willing to devote their lives to the service of their country in Parliament without payment or expectation of reward. In 1911, however Members toted themselves a salary of £100 per annum each. In this they were following the example of the Parliaments of other nations and of our self governing Colonies. Whether it will tend, as it has done in some countries, to create a class of professional politiciary who go into Parliament for what they can get out of it, the future can alone decide

INSIDE THE HOUSE

And now let us take a glance at the close ranks of members as they occupy the benches on either side of the House. At one end stands the Speaker's chair, "Mr. Speaker," as he is always addressed, sits there—a dignified figure in wig and gown. He is the "foremost commoner" of the realm, and possesses great powers of discipline. These powers are necessary, for sometimes party feeling runs very high, and hot words are shouted across the floor of the House. The Speaker, therefore, who is chosen by the whole House as its spokesman, and as the gnardian of its honour and liberties, is entrusted with authority to "name" an unruly and disobedient member, i.e. to ask him to withdraw, and in extreme cases to commit him to imprisonment in the Clock Tower. If compulsion is necessary, the Speaker calls upon the Sergeant-at-Arms. who sits near by, to exercise the necessary force. Good order is thus preserved, with the result that our House of Commons is regarded as the most dignified and well-conconducted Legislative Assembly in the world.

In front of the Speaker is a table at which sit three bewigged clerks, and upon the table rests the Maco. The Maco, which is always laid in front of the Speaker when he takes the chair, is an ancient emblem of power. It is usual even for the Mayor of a town to be preceded by a macebearer when in procession. When sitting in Council the Mace is placed before him. We English people do not like too many ceremonial observances, but we cling to centain of them with great tenacity. And in the course of the ages we have learnt that there is much wisdom in surrounding those in authority with outward symbols of dignity. The Mace is one of these symbols.

Hoon the right hand of the Speaker sit the members

of the party in power—His Majesty's Government—On his left hand are the members of the Opposition—You must look to the Speaker's right to see the Cabinet Ministers—They always ut on the Front Bench. On the of positio Front Bench sit the lenders of the Opposition—If at the next election there is a change of Government and the Outs" become the Ins. then the Opposition party woull cross the floor of the House—and occupy the Government benches

TIBERALS AND CONSERVATIVES

In our country there are two great parties which have been called by a mous names in the course of listory-Roundheals and Cavaliers Whigs and Tories and nonadays Liberals and Conservatives There are other parties in the House of Commons such as the Labour party and the Irish party These profess to be neither Liberal nor Conservative but to be representative of the labouring classes and of the Irish people respectively. But as neither of these parties is numerically strong enough to command a working majority in the House they aide sometimes with one and sometimes with the other of the great historic parties and thus sometimes can turn the scale in one direction or another WI en they can do this they are said to possess the balance of power Laberal party is generally associated with the alea of progressive legislation. The extremists in this party are often termed I adicals The Conservative party on the other hand as its name indicates is more concerned with preserving the settled order of things handed down to us from our forefathers. They are not entirely opposed to change or progress but they desire to make those changes with as little disturbance as possible to existing institutions.

36 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

It is, they say, always easier to pull down than to build up, and the Conservative party, therefore, always opposes any far-reaching changes in our Constitution.

THE GOVERNMENT "POLICY"

The programme-as we may call it-of measures which the Government desires to pass into laws is called its policy. Thus the Liberal party holds that Free Trade is essential to the continued prosperity of this country, and that Home Rule would be good for Ireland. These, then, are some of the items of the Liberal policy or "planks in the Liberal platform," On the other hand, the Conservatives think that a certain degree of Protection (of which you will learn more in a later chapter) would improve the trade of the country, and that Home Rule would be disastrons to Ireland. So "Tariff Reform" or "Protective Duties," and "No Home Rule" are part of the Conservative policy. You can for yourself think of many other matters which are the subject of great political controversy-for there is always before the country some pronosal of importance upon which opinion is sharply divided,

THE "PARLIAMENTARY MACHINE"

Let us see, then, how the "parliamentary machine" works. First of all the proposals are written down and embodied in what is called a Bill. Before this Bill can become an Act of Parliament, that is, before it can be put upon the Statute Book as one of the laws of the realm, it must be "read" three times in the House of Commons, afterwards it must be sent up to the House of Lords also for their approval. It is usual to let the Bill go through its "First Reading" without any discussion. When,

however, it comes to the Second Reading there is-if the Bill is at all important—a big debate upon its principles If there is a division of opinion the House "divides" These who approve of the Bill go into one lobby, and those who disapprove into another | Each side is counted, and the majority decides whether the Bill is to go on or not. If the Second I ending is 'carried" the House "goes into Committee and the Bill is examined critically clause by clause and word by word. If the Opposition disapprove very strongly of the hill they draft a large number of amen liments are they suggest altern tions of the wording or additional clauses or the omission of certain words or clauses. When the amendments are numerous you will easily see that this is a very tedious and lengthy business and sometimes after a whole even ings debate the Bill may not have advanced by more than a single word or sentence. As progress is almost impossible at this rate with long and important Bills, the Government closes the debate and passes several clauses in a block. This closure of the debate is nicknamed "tho guillotine since it cits off all possibility of discussing the clauses any further in detail After discussion, more or less prolonged and after the Bill has assumed what is probably its final form it is 'n ported to the House as amended, and comes on for its Third Leading Another debute may follow and more amendments may be made and another Division taken upon it It is then "through" the House of Commons, and is sent up to the House of Lords to go through the same procedure there. --

If the Lords alter it, the Bill has to come down to the Commons for their consent to the Lords Amendments, then k.ck again to the Lords and so on Finally when 'through' both Houses the Bill is taken to the Threno for the Loyal Assent Thenceforth it is no lought a Lill but an Act of Parliament. It is then a Law, and is insocihed in the Statute Book, and is always referred to by the place it occupies in that book. Thus the Children Act of which you will hear in a later chapter is referred to as "8 3td. VII. c. 67," which means that it was passed in the eighth year of the reign of King Edward the Seventh, and that the Act forms the 67th Chapter in the Statuto Book of that year.

PARTY GOVERNMENT

We now see party government in the working. A Bill is carried bit by bit against the Opposition by sheer weight of the majority that the Government possesses in the House. It is of supreme importance, therefore, that there should always be present in the House a majority which will enable the Government to vote down the Opposition. To see that members are present in sufficient numbers to prevent the Government being out-voted. certain members are chosen as "Whips"-a term taken from the hunting field. The Whips keep the pack together, and "whip up" the stragglers. Each party appoints it own "Whips," and wee betide the unlucky momber who misses an important division without having given previous notice to his Whip of his inability to be present. It is the duty of the Government Whips to "keep a majority," and they have a very busy time indeed in looking after members and informing them when their presence is urgently demanded. For you must understand that if defeated upon an important division, it is customary for the Government to resign office, and a general election must then take place again,

THE MAJORITY RULES

We live under the rule of the majority, and however small that majority may be, the minority has to give way This may or may not be the best possible system, but it has on the whole, worked well in our country. But because it works well here do not imagine this system would suit all races in all parts of the world. There are peoples who have not, like the British the faculty of selfgovernment, and to whom representative government is quite unfamiliar. To them government by a bare majority would appear both civel and unjust. Remember that our institutions based upon the rule of the majority, are the growth of a thousand years of self government among a liberty loving and self reliant people, and that our native methods cannot always be transplanted into foreign lands with impunity especially when the inhabitants of such lands have never even enjoyed or been trained to exercise the most elementary rights of citizenship

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

- 1 Discuss some of the difficulties that attend a Legislative Assembly that has not control over the Executive
- 2 State the advantages and disadvantages of payment of Members of Parliament
- 3 Name the Leaders (1) of the Opposition, (2) of the Irich Party, (3) of the Labour Party
- 4 Ascertain from some work of reference such as "Whitaker's Almanack" or "Hazell's Annual" (1) the total number of millions sterling raised by taxation last year, (2) the amounts spent on the Navy and Army respectively, (3) the amount spent on Education, (4) the amount spent on the Civil Service, (5) the amount of the National Debt

- 5. How far is it just to the minority, that the will of the
- majority shall prevail? 6. If an M.P. is appointed to an "Office of Profit under the Crown" (e.g. if appointed Solicitor-General) during the course of the Session, he has to seek re-election by his constituents. Discuss whether this practice (which only dates

from 1708) should be continued or abandoned,

CHAPTER V

PARLIAMENT (Concluded)

THE HOUSE OF LOPDS

We will now follow the course of the Bill after its Third Reading in the Commons—It has probably many adventures to suffer before it becomes an Act.' It has first to go up" to the Hou e of I ends and undergo descussion there—If the Lords amend it it must go back to the Commons for the latter to consider whether they agree with the alterations—Last of all, it has to receive the Royal Assent.

Whilst our imaginary Bill is awaiting its fate in the House of Lords, let us for a few moments study the constitution of that Assembly

Of the three 'Letates of the Realm'—the Lords Spiritual, Lords Temporal, and the Commons—two sit in the House of Lords, an institution more ancient than the House of Commons. In early times the Spiritual Lords greatly outnumbered the Temporal Lords or Lay Petrs. To-day the position is reversed and only twenty six spiritual Lords sit in the "cilded chamber." These are the two Archbushops, the Bishops of London, Winehester and Durham and twenty one others who are summened to Parhument according to the seniority of their Conserts ton. The lay lords number, at the time of writing, about 600, bit is new pregices are constantly being or ited, and

as titles now and then become extinct through the dying out of old families, there is no absolute fixity in the number of temporal poers.

SCOTTISH AND IRISH PEERS

The whole of the English Peers have the right to be. summoned to Parliament, but not all the Scottish and Irish Peers. After each general election the Peers of Scotland assemble at Holyrood Palace and choose sixteen of their number to represent the Scottish Peerage in the Upper Chamber until the next general election. The Irish Peers have the right to elect twenty-eight of their number to sit for life in the House of Lords. Those Scotch and Irish Peers who have not been elected to the House of Lords, are eligible as members of the House of Commons, and you thus sometimes have the apparent. anomaly of a "lord" sitting as an elected representative in the Commons. We are in this respect more democratic than most countries. The eldest son even of a Dake can sit in the House of Commons until he succeeds to the title. The sons of peers are always commoners even though they often bear "courtesy" titles.

THE LORD CHANCELLOR AGAIN

The Lord Chancellor, as you have learnt in an earlier chepter, is one of the most important members of the Ministry. He is always selected because of his high legal position, and, if not already a lord, he is at once raised to the peerage. His office is so exalted and unique as to constitute almost a national institution in itself. The "Chancellor" was originally the King's confidential advisor and secretary, and in earlier days was always a

cleric (e.g. Cirdinal Wolsey) and a distinguished man of learning. He became, as you will learn in the chapter on Courts and Judges, the dispenser of the King's "equitable jurisdiction," the "Keeper of the King's Conscience," and stood next in importance to the King himself The Lord Chancellor is now the head of our legal system and appoints (in the name of the King) all the Judges, except a few of the highest rank, whose appeintment rests in the hands of the Prime Minister. He also appoints practically all the Justices of the Peace on the recommen dation of the Lord Lieutenant of the county The Lord Chancellor presides over the highest of our tribunals-the House of Lords-when the latter is performing its judicial functions as the Final Court of Appeal In full bettomed wigs he sits on the Woolsack (as the ancient presidential seat is called) and presides over the House of Lords in its capacity as a Second Chamber Thus the Lord Chancellor forms a link between our judicial and political systems He holds office only during the existence of the Government, of which he is one of the most important members In early days, the Chancellor was a great prelate and had a large number of Church livings in his gift. Although nowadays no Chancellor 19 ever a clergyman, he has nevertheless a very large amount of Church "patronage" to bestow, and he still appoints clergy to the Crown livings. By reason of this bestowal of patronage in the Inglish Church no Roman Catholic can become Lord Chancellor-the only public office from which members of this religious body are excluded. The Chancellor still represents the paternal character of the Sovereign, in that he is the guardian of lumities and idiots, and of orphin children under age The position held by the Lord Chancellor is one of the highest to which a British subject can aspire.

Though in a sense the Lord Chancellor is the Chairman of the House of Lords, his power falls far short of the Speaker of the House of Commons. For instance, the Lord Chancellor has no disciplinary authority. He cannot call the Lords to order, or indicate the peer who shall be entitled to speak if—as often happens—two or more rise at the same time in their places intent upon addressing the House. Matters like these, which repose solely in the hands of the Speaker of the House of Commons, are left to the Lords to sottle among themselves, by vote if necessary.

DEGREES OF RANK

. Most of the members of the House of Lords are men who have been rewarded by a title for some service to their country, or they are the descendants of such men, the titles being hereditary. There are several grades in the order of nobility, The Princes of the Blood-as kings' sons or brothers are called-come first, but very rarely indeed do they attend the House, and never do they take any part in political discussion. Then come the 2 dukes, of whom there are only about a score; then the marquises, numbering a few more than the dukes; then the earls, in number about 125; next the viscounts; and, lastly, the barons, of whom there are over three hundred. You may wonder why the bishops, whose titles are not hereditary, find a place among the legislators in the Upper House. The right of these Church dignitaries to a place in the legislature is derived from the earliest usage. Far away in the distant past, when the King called together his Witan or Council of Wise Men, he included the great bishops and abbots, who exercised immense sway by reason of their wealth and position. Thus it comes about that the bishops still are found in the Upper Chamber. There are other members of the House of Lords whom we lave not yet mentioned. These are the Law Lords, or Lords of Appeal, who are appointed life peers, and who receive large salaries to assist the House of Lords in performing those judicial functions which belong to it as the Final Court of Appeal. You will learn more of this side of the character of the House of Lords when we come to the chapter on Courts and Julys. Eanly peers for his only, their titles do not descend to their eldest sons.

TOPES AS I FUSILATORS

You now know something of the composition of the Upper Chamber and are ready to learn what happens when the Bill which after perhaps a very stormy passage through the Communs, comes to the Lords for their consent. Up to the year 1911 a Bill-before at could become an Act-had to pass three readings in the House of Lords just as in the Lower House In fact, up to that year the procedure in the two Houses was practically identical except that it had become customary for Iblis which dealt with taxation not to be amended in any way or rejected by the House of Lords. It had become the practice for the elected representatives (se the Commons) alone to decide what the electorate should pay for public purposes You have read in your histories-particularly in the period of the Civil War-how Parliament declined to permit the King to levy taxes without its consent. Little by little it became the custom for the House of Lords (though never formally relinquishing its ancient statutory right to amend or reject Money Bills) to acquiesce in this usage, and to allow such Bills to pass without any alteration whatever. But in 1009 the Lords rejected a Money Bill, namely the 'Budget of that year (see p 21),

and thus a crisis arose which has led to an alteration in the mode by which a Bill may be treated by the Upper Chamber.

To grasp the whole situation it is necessary to remember that formerly every Bill before it could become law had to be agreed to at each of three readings in the Lords; that the Bill could be refused a second or third reading; that amendments could be inserted in the Bill, will at the second reading to suit their lordships' views; and that unless the Commons agreed to the amendments proposed by the Upper House, the Lords could absolutely prevent it passing into law. To put it in technical language, the Lords had an "absolute veto" upon legislation proposed by the House of Commons.

Up to 1911 the foregoing statement summarises briefly the positions and powers of our Upper Chamber. But a radical change was effected in that year by an Act entitled "The Parliament Act," which protects Money Bills from the touch of the Lords, and with regard to other Bills limits their right to an "absolute veto." You will no doubt some day hear or read the whole story of the matter; but as it affords the best possible illustration of the way in which immemorial practice can be altered or modified at any moment by a Parliamentary majority, it is well for you, who, as the citizens of the future, will have the Government of the country in your own hands, to learn something of this Parliament Act, and of the changes it has introduced into the ancient meshwork of laws, usages, and institutions, which we call the Coustitution.

ATTEND THE CONSTITUTION THE PARLIAMENT ACT

To begin with let us look at the first clause of the Parliament Act which renders Money Bills immune from attacl by the House of Lords The clause runs thus -'If a Money Bill having been passed by the House of Commons and sent up to the House of Lords at least one month before the enl of the session is not passed by the House of Lords without amendment within one month after it is so sent up to the House the Bill shall (unless the House of Commons direct to the contrary) be presented to His Majesty and become an Act on the Royal Assent being signified notwithstanding that the House of Lords have not consented to the Bill You thus see that the new Act withdraws all Money Bills from the purview of the Lords We will next see how the Act alters the position of the Lords with respect to Bills that are not Money Bills To un lerstand fully the operation of the Parliament Act you must be informed-if you do not already know it-that the majority in the House of Lords are Conservative in opinion The Liberal party complained that their Bills did not therefore have a fair chance in the House of Lords. They cour lained also that the Lords either made such amendments to Liberal Bills as to deprive them of any value or rejected them altogether It was asserted that the Lords scarcely ever amended Conservative measures and therefore instead of acting as an impartial 'revising Chamber, they improperly favoured one political party

Consequently, in 1911, after a tremendous political struggle the Liberals succeeded in presing the Parliament Act which limits the veto of the House of Lords, that is it takes away the unlimited power of that House of rejecting measures passed by the House of Commons, You may reasonably ask how the Lords over consented to pass a Bill which so cuttailed their own powers. This was done by threatening to "swamp" the House of Lords with a wholesale creation of Liberal peers.

was done by threatening to "swamp" the House of Lords You have already learned, in Chapter I., that it is one of the prerogatives of the King to create peers; but even in the use of that prerogative the Crown acts upon the advice of the Prime Minister. So, rather than see their House invaded by a host of new peers, the Lords gave way and passed the Bill, and on August 18, 1911, it received the Royal Assent, and became henceforth an Act-the Parliament Act. This Act of only eight clauses is of such importance, and you are so likely to hear more of it in the future, that you ought to know the exact words of that portion of it which limits the Lords' veto." They run as follows:- "If any Public Bill is passed by the House of Commons in three successive sessions, that Bill shell on its rejection for the third time in the House of Lords be presented to His Majesty and become an Act of Parliament on the Royal Assent being signified thereto." You thus see that if the Lords "throw out" a Bill a third time their resistance is then at an end. After passing through the House of Commons three times (and each time it must undergo three readings in that House) the Bill-after a third rejection by the House of Lords-can be taken straight over their heads to the Throne, and become law as soon as His Majesty has signified his assent.

This at present is the "Law of the Land," but it is highly probable that some modification of it will be made in the future, when the reform of the House of Lords comes to be considered by Parliament.

REFORM OF THE HOUSE OF LORDS

from what you read in the last paragraphs you will have learned that the Second Chamber has been shorn of part of its powers, and that it can do little more than delay for about two years the passing of any measure of which it disapproves. For a long time past there has been a feeling among statesmen belonging to both great political parties that the hereditary principle' upon which the constitution of the Haise of Lords is based is no longer in keeping with modern ideas. Some people express the position by saying that there is no justification for some 000 men sitting as legislators simply because they were born to a title. It is desired by both parties to establish a Second Chamber upon some popular or elective lesss—that is the whole or part of the House of Lords should be elected by the people The Parliament Act opens with these wouls Whereas it is expedient that provision should be made for regulating the relations between the Houses of Parliament and whereas it is intended to substitute for the House of Lords as it at present exists a Second Chamber constituted on a popular instead of hereditary basis, but such substitute cannot be immediately brought into operation, etc. etc.

I rom these words you see that it is the expressed intention—of the Liberal purly at all counts—to bring forward some measure proposing a reform of the Hones forward some measure proposing a reform of the Hones Licils. You will probably witness a great party fight on this subject, and as it affords a constitutional problem of the highest order you ought to give this matter your close study. Indeed, each of you ought to take an intelligent interest in securing a just and reasonable settlement of this question, as every man, woman and child in the kingdom is directly affected by the smooth working of

the "Parliamentary Machine." Useful legislation is unduly delayed if the two Houses are occupied in fighting about the extent and scope of their respective powers.

THE TWO CHAMBER SYSTEM

The difficulties and friction that have of late manifested themselves between the two Houses of Parliament have led a certain number of politicians to ask whether we need a Second Chamber at all. There are some people who would like to dispense altogether with the House of Lords, and entrust the welfare of the country entirely to the House of Commons. Such people are sometimes called "Single-Chamber" men. This again is a matter upon which you will have to form your own opinion when you come to take your part in politics as a fully qualified citizen. It is often well in such cases to look abroad, and see what other civilised nations have done, and under what sort of government they live. We find then, if we examine foreign practice, that America has two Chambers -Congress and Senate; France has two Chambers-the Chamber of Deputies and the Senate; Germany has two Chambers-the Reichstag and the Bundesrath. Thus the greatest of modern nations live under a two-chamber system, and perhaps it is not too much to say that the collective wisdom of the leading civilised countries has decided in favour of a Second Chamber.

FIVE-YEAR PARLIAMENTS

The Parliament Act of 1911, of which you have already heard so much, has made yet another alteration in our constitutional practice. By its 7th Clause it reduces the duration of Parliament from seven to five years. Henceforward we shall have a general election at least every five years. You will learn that at one time in our history triennial Parliaments were the rule, but in the reign of George I their duration was extended by the Septemial Act to seven years. Experience has tended to show that a Government "loses touch" with the country if too long in office. The period of five years is therefore in the nature of a compromise, and you will doubtless watch with interest whether this shortening of the life of Parliament works beneficially or otherwise.

OUNIFOTENT PARITAMENT

Those who have read these chapters carefully may already have been struck with the fact that Parliament is completely muster of its own acts One Parliament can entirely alter or undo the work of another. If an Act were passed this session, it would be quite possible for Parliament to repeal it next session. There is nothing but the good sense of the members, who, taken together, form Parliament, to prevent them from repealing all those good and beneficial Acts which are the bulnarks of our liberties We know that members would never be so foolish as to do anything of the sort, but whilst Parliament can bind the Crown and the People by the laws it chooses to make, nothing whatever can bind Parliament We have noted how the Parliament Act of 1911 has made succoing changes in ancient constitutional usage. This power of re-modelling its own internal organisation is a feature which distinguishes our Parliamentary system from almost every other Legislature in the world

Most other nations possess a "written constitution," which is very inclusive. In the United States, for instance, the constitution laid down and committed to writing in

1769 by George Washington and his fellow-statesmen, is so "rigid" as to be almost unalterable. It requires a majority of three-fourths of the Legislatures of the several States to secure any modification, however small, of the Constitution, whereas, in Imperial Parliament, a "bare majority" of the party in power is sufficient to carry the most far-reaching changes. But do not think, therefore, that there is no check upon the abuse of power by a majority in either of the Houses of Parliament.

Whilst our parliamentary system allows the fullest

scope for wise and thoughtful reform, it provides also a series of checks upon the gross misuse of power. Thus the House of Lords, as you have just read, can stop a measure from becoming law for at least two years. This provides a sort of "brake" or "drag" upon the power of the House of Commons, and prevents that Chamber from hastily passing any legislation that has not been fully placed before the country. Again, the House of Commons, by threatening to advise the King to create peers in sufficient numbers to vote down the resistance of the Upper House, can secure the passage of a Bill through the Lords. This is a check upon any unreasonably prolonged resistance by the Peers to a measure greatly desired by the House of Commons. Then again, as you have already been told in Chapter I., the whole tendency of our history has been to place a check upon the power of the Crown, so much so that the Supremacy of Parliament is now mushallenged.

There is still left to the Crown the right to refuse assent to a measure passed by both Houses, and although this power would only be used in extreme cases, it undoubtedly exists, and remains as a check upon any extravagant sotion on the part of Parliament. These "checks," or "balances," which are of the highest value in the working of the "Tarliamentary Machine" form part of our 'unwritten law," which, though unwritten, forms none the less a fundamental part of our Constitution.

LOPPICY PARLIAMENTS

I ving as we do in her a Purliment that is in a sine all powerful we are apt to think that the Purliments of other countries are end well with similar sovertight. This is far from being the cise. I hough there are many points of hiseness in the manner of their election and in their powedure there are very many points of difference. The leading features of the British Latherment are that it is a complete master in its own House that no outside authority can control at whilst it can control every body and every institution within the realm. Not only does it controls its own constitution and can alter the fundamental rules and regulations by and are allered to fundamental rules and regulations by and ander which it exists.

Now how does this compare with foreign Parliaments I Wo lave already seen how difficult it is for the American Government to modify even to the smallest detail the written constitution under which it exists. Further than this the American Congress does not control the Freetive. In the United States, the Congress rules the Law, but the President rules the Administration. In our country Parliament rules both, and if any Minister is guilty of bod administration be can be turned out of his office upon a change of Government. In German, the Richeling or German Parliament has very hitle power over the Eventive, who are appointed and dismissed by the Imperor. In Russia the Duna has nather legislative nor administrative powers, and is nothing more than a consultative or deliberative council. Thus Parliamentary

Government means a great deal more in our land than elsewhere, and this is a fact you should remember when you are discussing the politics of foreign countries.

THE PRIVY COUNCIL

From an early period of our history the King of England was accustomed to consult a Privy Council-an important body recognised by law. The present Privy Council is the lineal descendant of the ancient Great Council, or Magnum Concilium, of which you have doubtless read in your histories. The Privy Council still exercises both judicial and administrative functions, but its political importance has almost entirely disappeared since the duties of government have been assumed by the Cabinet. The Judicial Committee of the Privy Council is the Court of Appeal from Colonial Courts, as well as from our own Ecclesiastical Courts, whilst other Committees take charge of the administration of various Government departments. The Board of Trade, for instance, is a Committee of the Privy Council, as was also the Board of Education until 1899, when it was established as a separate office. The Privy Council consists of about 290 eminent persons of every shade of political opinion appointed by the Crown, all of whom are addressed as Right Honourable. Cabinet Ministers are by virtue of their office appointed Privy Councillors. They principally form the acting Privy Council. The Lord President is the Fifth Great Officer of State, and as such is always a prominent member of the Cabinet. The Privy Council cannot originate legislation, but it performs many useful functions in the administration of the laws. Privy Councillors in both Houses have the privilege of speaking from the table instead of from their seats.

PARITAMENT

QUESTIONS FOR DISPUSSION AND RESEARCH

- Point out the advantages and dissultantages of a Secon!
 Chamber based upon the hereditary principle.
- 2 Ought the Bishors to sit in a reformed House of Lords?
 3 Should a Second Chamber elected on a popular basis have the power to amend or reject Money Bills?
 - 4 Discuss the question of "Single-Chamber Government."
- 5 What are the objections to Trienmal Parliaments!
- 6 How far has our "Omnipotent Parliament" control over the making of treaties with foreign Governments?

CHAPTER VI

THE TOWN COUNCIL

THE MAYOR

Those of you who live in London are well acquainted with the regular appearance, upon November 9th, in each year, of the sometimes interesting and always entertaining spectacle of the Lord Mayor's Procession. Upon that day—which coincided with the birthday of the late King Edward VII.—the new Lord Mayor of London goes in procession to the Law Courts, and is there introduced to and addressed by the Lord Chief Justice of England. He also visits the House of Lords, and is there introduced to and welcomed by the Lord Chancellor. The Lord Mayor, like all other Mayors, has for the period of his office certain judicial functions to fulfil. It is therefore quite proper and in accordance with ancient practice that he should first of all make the acquaintance of the two great legal dignitaries above mentioned.

In his turn the Lord Mayor, as head of the wealthiest as well as the oldest and most celebrated of all municipal corporations, invites the Lord Mayors and Mayors of provincial towns to London. A banquet is then provided for their delectation, at the Mansion House, where the Lord Mayor resides during his year of office, and the chief municipal rulers of the whole of England thus have an unequalled opportunity, thanks to the hospitality of

London's Chief Magistrate, of meeting and making each others acquaintance

November 9th is a yearly landmark in the local government of our country, for upon that day the new mayors come into office and take up those voluntary dates which—if properly discharged—will usurp practically the whole of their time and energy for the next tricle months. Though some of the mayors of the large towns and cities receive a salary this remaneration is rurely or never sufficient to cover the expenses attaching to their position. For the mayor as the head of the Corporation must dispense hospitality upon a generous scale and his salary is usually insufficient for this purpose quite apart from other expenses to which the most prominent citizen of the town is expected to contribute

The Mayor who is diputfied in the case of certain great towns by the title of Lord Mayor is elected to the Chair by the votes of the Aldermen and Councillors. So before we proceed to consider the duties of His Worship the Mayor, let us turn for a moment to the constitution of the City or Borongh Louncil—generally called the Town Council—of which the Mayor is for the time being the Chairman or President

Aldermen and Councillois

Sometimes you hear the Town Council spoken of as the Corporation but do not let the difference in name confuse you in the least. The Corporation comprises the Mayor, the Aldermen, and the Burgesses or Citizens as represented by their Councillors. The Aldermen, who rank above the Councillors, are generally persons with considerable knowledge of the towns affairs, and as a rule one chosen by the Councillors from amongst

58 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

themselves on the same day as they choose the new Mayor. They hold office for six years, after which they must submit themselves for re-election if they still wish tremain in office. Since the year 1907 women are eligible as councillors and aldermen, and there have already been a few instances in which women have actually filled the office of mayor.

The Councillors (who in London are called Common Councillors and elsewhere Town Councillors) are the elected representatives of the burgesses or townsfolk Like members of the House of Commons, they have to go through all the stress of a public election, though or course on a smaller scale. Town Councillors are elected on November 1st, and when that day next comes round you should watch what takes place in your town.

you should watch what takes place in your town.
Councillors ought to be elected by reason of thei
fitness for the honour, and not upon political grounds
but, nevertheless, politics sometimes creep into municipa
affairs and disturb the judgment of the electors. Some
times, too, religious differences are allowed to intrad
themselves into these local parliaments. But if ever you
come to take your part in the government of your town
or district, set your face resolutely against anything o
the kind. In our local councils men and women should
be chosen who will serve the best interests of the town
or district, without reference to their private political or
religious views. There is plenty of work to be done it
the coincil, as you will boot see, of a non-party character
In order that no part of a town shall go unrepre

sented, it is divided up into areas called "wards," and each ward sends one or more members to the council Councillors are elected for three years, and after that period they must again seek re-election if they wish to stay on the council. The voters in any ward are the

householders and ratepayers in that wand, and since 1869 women have had equal rights with men in voting for town comerifore. Some day, as we said in a provious chapter, women may also possess the "parliamentary franchise," that is, the right to vote for members of l'arliament, but at present they have only the "municipal franchise"

The management of the town's affairs rests with the council, and by wisely exercising the powers placed in their bands by Parliament, the council may do a great deal for the health and happiness of their fellow-townsfolk. You see that as they are not paid for their services you cannot force the Mayor and Corporation to be active in well-doing, but if a few men and women of strong public spirit get on the council, it is surprising how much they can do to improve everything over which they have control.

A Town Councillor, who goes to the council with the intention of giving his time and heet thought to the service of the public is a most valuable citizen. Ho is working for the common good

PRESERVING THE PEACE THE POLICE

And now you shall see what an immense amount of work falls upon a Town Council Firstly, there is the preservation of order, and for that purpose a Police loce is established usually called the City or Borough Constability. In times of disturbines such as occasionally happen during strikes, the Police Porce may not be able to cope with the disorder, and in that case the Mayor has very considerable powers. He can send for the military, and if the noters refuse to disperse on his building them to do so, he may read the Riot Act sload,

and then order the military to clear the streets. If the mob should show resistance, the officer in charge of the soldiers may order his men to fire. Fortundely these scenes of rictous disorder are not very common in our country, but it is well for you to know that there are in reserve strong measures for preserving the peace; and that when the police, who are an unarmed civil force, are powerless to protect the persons and property of law-abiding citizens from injury, it becomes the duty of the mayor to summon the armed forces of the Crown to their assistance.

The Borough Police Force is under the management of a "Watch Committee," composed of members of the Council, and is inspected by the Home Office as to its general efficiency. The very name of this important Committee reminds us of the days of the old "watchmen" who with lantern and staff patrolled the streets calling out the hours as the night passed away. Very inefficient, you may be sure, were these old "Charlies," as they were nicknamed, and the introduction by Sir Robert Peel in 1829 into the London Streets of the Metropolitan Police Force or "Peelers," added greatly to the safety of the Capital. But it was not until 1856 that every County and Borough possessed a regular constabulary of its own, so that very many people still living can remember the days of the old watchmen. In Londonthere are two bodies of Police-the City of London; Force under the control of the City of London Corporation, and the Metropolitan Force, controlled by the Home Secretary. The latter force, in times of danger, can be drafted to other parts of the country to assist the local police.

LIGHTING, PAVI'O, AND CLEANSING

You would be astomshed if you could go back a century to find how bully lighted paved and cleanwell were the streets and reads of even the great towns A few oil lamps often constituted the whole of the arrange ments for illuminating the streets pavements were very rough, and roads full of deep ruts the mud was rarely removed and refuse and rubi ish were thrown about any where and everywhere I roter brainage was almost unknown and people drunk from polluted streams and wells with the result that infectious diseases like typhus and typhoid fiver smallp v scarlet fever and diphtheria were rampant. If you compare this state of things with the conditions that at procut of tain in a modern town you cannot fail to be struck by the contrast. The streets brilliantly helited by gas or electricity the smooth and chan roads and passiments the well-ordered systems of dramage and saures the cornous supply of good water the general effort to vards cleanliness and the reduced death rate all point to the censuless activity of the local conneils by whose labours these beneficent changes have leen officted

WATER USD REALTH

The first step towards securing and maintaining the public licitly is to make sure of a constant and liberal supply of pure water. We therefore find that Parlia ment has endowed the Local Councils whether Borough, County, Urban District, Rural District or Parish Councils with very considerable powers of providing the areas over which they have control with a continuous supply of pure drinking water. Perhaps you know that many

diseases such as cholera, typhoid fever, and other com-plaints are "water-borne," that is, the germs of these diseases are conveyed by water from one person to another person. You can thus realise how necessary it is for every one to be supplied with water which is free from any sort of contamination. It is only during the last century, and since scientific men have discovered that most diseases are communicated by means of very small microscopic forms of life-known as microbes or bacillithat people have awakened to the necessity of scrupulous cleanliness not only of the body, but also of the house and its surroundings. Consequently much of the work of the Local Councils has been in the direction of enforcing rules and regulations for the supply of pure water and the removal of sewage. So successful have these measures been, that we may safely say that the average individual life has been raised by some ten years, that is, we each live-on the average-ten years longer than our forefathers a century ago. Many diseases that ravaged our country have been almost stamped out, such as smallpox, cholera, and typhus fever, while others like searlet fever, diphtheria, and typhoid fever are much less prevalent than formerly.

Local Councils could not have done those things or, indeed, anything else, unless they had first received the necessary authority from Parliament. The year 1875 is therefore one you should remember in this connection, for it was the passing of the great Public Health Act of that year which extended the powers of the Local Councils very widely, and made it possible for children in the future to be reared under cleaner, purer, healthier conditions than ever had been known before. From 1875 onwards, almost every year has witnessed some

improvement in sanitary law, and some further addition to the powers of the local authorities.

BYP LANG

To secure obedience to their orders the Town Council (and other Councils also) are allowed to make rules and regulations called 'bye laws to break which is punishable by a fine not exceeding £5. You will readily understand that these miniature legislative enactments must not be out of harmony with the seneral law of the land Indeed before the bye laws have any force they must be submitted to and receive the sanction of the Local Government Board (see p. 23) which is the Department of the Central Government charged with the oversight of local administration

OTHER DETIFS OF THE COUNCIL

The policing lighting paving and cleaning of the streets, and the caring for the public health, though affording plenty of work for the Town Councils, do not by any means exhaust the number of their duties. It would take quite a large volume to describe with any sort of detail the multiplicity of affairs with which Coancillors have to concern themselves. The regulation of markets and of burnal grounds, the provision of parks, recreation grounds and open spaces, the establishment and management of free libraries, swimming biths, and public washhouses, the supervision of the erection of new buildings so as to see that they conform with the law, the inspection of nuisances, the analysing of milk and food and drugs to prevent adulteration, are some only of the matters over which the Town Council has to exercise authority

The provision and control of the education given in the schools, the feeding of school children, etc., etc., also furnish additional work for the Council to do. So great indeed is the mass of detail, that there is a danger of our Local Parliaments becoming overburdened in the same way as the Imperial Parliament. Again, many of our municipalities have undertaken the construction and management of the tramway system within their areas, as well as the supply of gas, water, and electricity.

MUNICIPAL TRADING

The question of "municipal trading" is one which has excited a good deal of controversy-especially in London. There is no doubt that in some big towns, the taking-over by the Council of the tramway, gas, water, and electricity systems, has been attended with much success. There is talk also of making the supply of milk to the people the subject of municipal enterprise. The reasons for this are that impure milk has more often than anything else (except impure water) been the cause of outbreaks of disease, especially among children. To ensure a regular supply of pure milk is held to be of such importance to the community as to warrant the municipality entering into the business of dairy farming. You will be sure to hear more about this in the future, and it is only right that you should look at both sides of the question-for every great question has always two sides to it.

THE MAYOR IS A MAGISTRATE

One of the honours which the State renders to the Mayor is to make him for the period of his office and for one year afterwards a Justice of the Peace. About the duties and privileges of these important, unpaid servants of the State you will learn more by and by, but for the prezent you may remember that they are generally spoken of as the Magistrates, and they are entrusted with the administration of the law, and with power of punishment for small offences The Mayor's time in large towns and cities is often far too much occupied with other affairs, to ellow him to preside over the Pench and listen to all the cases that come before the magistrates Many of these cases also demand an intimate acquaintance with the law. We find, therefore, in the larger towns a barrister specially appointed to preside over the police court. As he receives a salary or stipend for performing this necessary and arduous work, he is called a "Supendary Magistrate"

People who have broken the bye-laws of the town, or who have neglected to send their children to school, or who have been drank or disorderly, or who have committed other offences of a bad but not desperately entimed character can be punished by the Mayor and his fellow magistrates, or by the "Stipendary," with fines or short terms of impresoment. How the more sections crimes are treated we shall learn in the chapter

upon Courts and Judges

THE TOWN CLERK

Since the work of the Town Council touches the law at so many points, it is necessary to have some one near at hand who is skilled in the law and who can advise the council in all cases of difficulty. With this object it is usual to appoint a trained lawyer as Town Clerk, and this important official is always present at the meetings of the council, and keeps the "minutes" or records of the proceedings at such meetings. Many other duties devolve upon the Town Clerk. He has the enstody of the charters, deeds, and other documents belonging to the borough, he sends out the summoness for the meetings of the council, and in any law suit in which the town may be engaged he has to prepare the case-for the counsel. He has in short to watch over the work of the various Committees, and see that they not merely carry out the law, but do not exceed the powers that the law gives them. The Town Clerk's. Office is usually in the Town or City Hall, and is always one of the busiest departments in the building.

The Rates

One question must be asked before we close this chapter, and that is how does the Town Council get the money to pay for all the things of which we have been speaking? People have to be employed for all the purposes above mentioned, and some of them, like the Town Clerk, receive large selaries. The answer to the question is that the money is raised by "levying a rato" upon all householders and occupiers, and how that is done we shall learn in the lesson on Rates and Taxes.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH.

1. The Town Council of a German Town elect as their Head a "Burgermeister," who is a paid permanent efficial, and always a trained lawyer. Compare the advantages of otherwise of this system with the voluntary system in force with us.

- 2 Our country alone in Europe does not arm its police
- force. What reasons can you give for this practice?

 3 Discuss the pres and cone of Municipal Trading with special reference to the supply of (1) gas and water, (2) transways, (3) pure bulk.

CHAPTER VII

COUNTY AND OTHER COUNCILS

THE URBAN DISTRICT COUNCIL

Though many of you who read these pages will be living in towns governed by a Mayor and Corporation, yet no doubt there are many also who come under one or other of the various Councils which between them look after the local affairs of the rest of the country. Towns not yet incorporated as boroughs are under authorities named Urban District Councils. We will therefore take these first. They are not very ancient in their origin, as they date only from 1894, when they supplanted the older Urban Sanitary Authorities. But though young in years they have become very important bodies. The members of an U.D.C. are elected for three years in just the same way as Town Councillors (described in the last chapter), but in April instead of November. Though in many respects they resemble Borough Councils, Urban District Councils differ in having no Aldermen and no Mayor,

The Chairman, though not wearing robes and chain of office, is, however, honoured by the State by being made a J.P. (Justice of the Peace) during his term of office

It would be tiresome to discuss in detail all the things that an Urban District Council can do; try simply to remember that it is very much like a Borough Council. Indeed, Berough Councils are also Urban District Councils Thus we find the U.D.C looks after the lighting, paving, cleaning, and watering of the roads, it makes and maintains the drains and severs, it can get permission to provide transarys, and to undertake the supply of gas water, and electricity, it may also with the consent

of the ratepayers establish Irel Illranes laths Re creation Grounds, etc. To pay for all these things it can also levy rates about which you will have more in the next chapter. But—and here it differs from the ligger Boroughs

—it does not raise its own I olice but lures them from the County Force. Arother difference is fine I in the relation of the Urban District Council to the schools in its area. The big County Boroughs like Birmingham, Leeds Layer pool and others are charged with the profision and over sight of both elementary and secondary education whereas an UD C—unless it is very important—has to content itself with the administration of the elementary schools only. With these differences you may regard an Urban District Council as having practically the same authority as a Boron, Is Council.

When you get away from the towns with their vast activities, into the heart of the country among the villages you find other councils munchy the Rural District Councils and the Parish Councils which were also called into existence in 1891 when they supplanted the cirlier Rural Sanitary Authorities and Local Boards. To each of these a certain measure of authority is entrusted.

Fretywhere, then throughout our country, we now

clearry the people governing themselves. On the large scale we see it in the Great Parliament in London-Imperial Parliament we must call it, since it has to manage the affairs of the Empire—and on the small scale in the lesser Councils in the towns and countres

RURAL DISTRICT COUNCILS

The members of the Rural District Council are elected, as a rule, on the first Monday in April. They hold office for three years, just like the Councillors in a Borough Council or an U.D.C. The Chairman of a R.D.C., who is elected by the Councillors, also becomes by virtue of his office a J.P. for the county in which his district is situated. A woman is eligible for the Chair, but she cannot, as yet, enjoy the privilege of sitting upon the Bench of Magistrates.

The management of the sanitary affairs in the country districts is the especial function of the Rural District Councils. Every member of a R.D.C. is also constituted, by virtue of his office, a Poor Law Guardian (see p. 84). The Rural District Councils have large powers in the matter of water supply, and must see that every house is properly supplied with water. They have authority to inspect private houses, and to insist that insanitary dwellings shall be closed altogether. Unfortunately, owing to the prevailing searcity of cottages in rural districts, they permit many to remain open that ought to be abolished.

If there has been an outbreak of fever or smallpox in any house, or if a dwelling is in a filthy condition, the R.D.C. may order it to be disinfected and whitewashed. No part of a dwelling may be made into a pig-sty. In short the R.D.C.—like all the other Councils—has the power of forcing every householder to keep his premises wholesome. This, of course, ho ought to do without any compulsion; but some people have yet to learn the value of cleanliness, whilst others are too lasy to keep themselves and their surroundings in a clean condition, and must be

forced into better ladits, for every durin person or fifthy house is a danger to a whole community

To watch over all these sanitary matters the RDC (like other Councils) appoints an Inspector of Nussaces and also a Vedical Officer of Health who is usually a doctor rending in the district. When these samitary officers report that certain nuisances or infectious diseases exist it is the duty of the council to take stops to skip the nonsances and to be all they can to prevent the infectious diseases from spreading. If necessary they may establish fever hisritals and cometeries. But the RDC does not con errors it if with the hall time changing of stricts provis a of shoots libraries public baths wash louses recreat on grands etc unless indeed the Local Government Bourl cufers upon the R.D C (as it occasionally does) some or ill of the powers of the Urban Councils. In many matters therefore a Roral District Council has to rely up n its big frother, tho County Council of which we shall soon speak) for adtantages that I rough or Urban District Councils can secum for themselved

THE PARISH COUNCIL

At the very foot and base of the local government system of our country comes the Parish Council and the Far h Meeting. The Parish Council which dries only from 1894 has taken the place of a very ancient body—the Vestry Meeting, so called from the place in the church where the meeting was generally held. In olden times when the parish and church were much more closely connected the Vestry Meeting presided overly the parson did all the practical work of the parish. But since the institution of larish Councils the only work left to the

"Vestry" is to elect one of the churchwardens, and to look after the repair of the church and churchyard, and to administer the ecclesiastical charities.

Very considerable powers are given to these smallest units in our scheme of local government. A parish having a population of 300 or more is entitled to have a Parish Council. Parishes less than this (unless the County Council confers a Council upon the Parish) have only a Parish Meeting-a body which does little else but appoint some of its members as Overseers of the Poor. The Parish Council, which is elected in April, consists of from 5 to 15 persons nominated at a Parish Meeting. All ratenavers in the parish may go to this meeting and vote. Women may attend and may also be elected to the council. A Parish Council has the care of the local footpaths, but the main roads, as we shall find later in this chapter, are under the charge of the County Council. Labourers may be helped by the Parish Council to acquire small allotments of land for cultivation; open spaces for recreation may also be purchased, and cometeries may be provided. If the parish desires it, the council may also establish a free library, public baths and wash-houses, and may buy a fire engine and organise a fire brigade. It may also make arrangements for lighting the streets. But one of its oldest rights, which it took over from the Vestry, is the appointment of Overseens of the Poor, whose name indicates the nature of their duties.

OVERSEERS OF THE POOR

The Overseers are appointed yearly about the end of March by the Parish Council or Parish Meeting. In towns they are appointed by the Town Council or Urban District Council, and in some few cases by the Guardians. The chief duty of the Oversters of the Poor is to levy an l collect the Poor Late, about which you will learn more in a later chapter. The Overscers, acting under instructions from the Clerk of the County Council, also prepare lists of the persons liable to serve on juries, also lists of the voters for the parliamentary and local government elections In parishes not having a Larish Council the Overveers manage the parish property in conjunction with the Chair man of the Larish Meeting. The Overseers hold office for a year, and are not parl and it is usually a very thankless task that they have to perform The duty is one which any substantial houselider in the pirish may be called upon to undertake and the person chosen can be forced to serve. Even lukes have been compelled to take office. It is not as onerous as farmerly Paid assistance is now permitted and the Assistant Overseer does practically all the drud_ery of the office

OLD TIME IT CRES

In olden times there were other humble parish officials at pointed by the Vestry whose trames are familiar to all of us. There were for instance the Larish Constable, very different in efficiency and at parametes—if looglerry in Shakespeares. Much Ado about Nothing is a fair sample—from the modern policition belonging to the County Lorce, the Purish Beadle (whom all readers of Dickens "Oliver Twist" will remember) resplendent in cocked hat and gold lines and occupied with many small dates one of which was to see that the boys properly behaved themselves when in church

The Parish Clerk was another old time official. He sat immediately below the parson and took a prominent part in the church service, leading the responses and

chanting the Amons. He is a figure often appearing in the literature of an earlier day. He was very much in evidence at funerally marriages, and baptisms, and alway expected, and generally received small fees for the shar he took in these ceremonies. The office is now of littl importance, and is rarely filled.

Last, but not least, came the Sexton, who dug the graves and took care of the churchyard. A sexton is still appointed, but the closing of so many churchyards an the opening of public burial grounds has tended to reduce the importance of his office. He is now seldom more that the bell-ringer and caretaker of the church.

THE TITHES

Since the coming of the Parish Councils much of the authority formerly wielded by the parson has passed int the hands of the Parish Council. But the ancient methoof supporting the clergyman who ministers to the spiritua needs of the parish still remains.

In all old parishes the rector or vicar derives a part o his income from the tithes. The tithes were originally the tenth part of the yearly increase (t.e. produce) of the land. The more valuable of the tithes were known a the "greater," and the less valuable as the "lesser" tithes When a clergyman receives both, he is the "rector" of the parish; if he is entitled only to the lesser he is the "vicar," Many of the monasteries and abbeys in Englan held livings in their gift, and received, the tithes of these parishes. They kept the "greater" tithes for themselve—the tithe of wheat and of sheep and oxen—and allower the vicar or substitute (Latin, vicarius, a substitute), whe performed the actual, work of the parish, to receive the lesser tithe, the tithe of fruits. When the monasteries

were broken up, and their land given away, the new owners claimed and their descendants in many cases still continue to receive the "greater" tithes which were formerly paid to the abbeys and monastenes.

Not may see to this day in some parts of the country what are called Tithe Burns. Here the farmers used to send a tenth of their sheaves and a tenth of their lambs and cahies. You may be sure it was not a very concenient way in which to pay the part in for his ministrations to the parts. Yo in the just 1800 a law was passed called the Tithe Commutation 1ct. It is which the worth of the tithes was calculated in money. By this law all tithes were communied in changed into fixed rent charges. In 18 to the price of cornectaken on the average all over the country—was 50s a quarter and the sum that cuch superate estate had to pay was calculated on that I are. As corn is clearer to-day than it was then the tithe payable upon the land is proportionally less.

THE COUNTY COUNCILS

We have left this the greatest and most powerful of all the Local Councils to the last because to a certain extent the County Council has the oversight of all the lesser Councils. You must be were, get it quite clear in your minds that the County Council has no not of authority over the lig boroughs—about 70 of them—alich are by reason of it or size an Limportance called County Boroughs. Thus the County Council of Laucashiro has no authority inside the County Borough of Liverpool and the County Council of Council of Warnick-shire no power within the boundaries of the County Borough of Dirmingham, and so forth. But over the non-county borough councils

the County Council exercises a certain amount of control, especially in those matters which concern the county as a whole, and not just the individual districts or parishes.

The County Councils, as at present constituted, are not of great age, as they only date from 1888, prior to which the Counties were governed by the Magistrates sitting in Quarter Sessions. Then, for the first time in history, Parliament made it possible for the dwellers in the County to enjoy the benefits of municipal government without being forced to seek these in the towns, and allowed the rural communities to secure for themselves the amenities and conveniences of modern life so far as these are desirable in the country.

HOW ELECTED

County Councillors are elected usually about Match 8th, and sit for three years. They proceed at once to choose a number of Aldermen, sometimes from among themselves, sometimes from outside, and these Aldermen hold office for six years. They also select a Chairman, who by virtue of his office is a Justice of the Peace for the County. Women ratepayers may vote at county council electious, and may, since 1907, be appointed to the rank of alderman, or even to the Chair, but in the latter case the appointment would not carry with it he right to sit on the County Bonch of Magistrates.

Though County Councils have entrusted to them such great powers, they must keep strictly "within the four corners" of the Acts of Parliament that give them those powers. They may make bye-laws (see p. 63), but those bye-laws must not be contrary to the general law of the land, and must receive, the sauction of the Home Office before they can be enforced in a Court of Law.

Sour of their Duties

You shall not be weared by any lengthy description of the work of the County Councils. The following out line of their powers will however, give you some notion of the immense influence they may and do exercise upon the well being of the whole of their "administrative area. These powers comprise the making levying, and expend ing of the county and other rates the erection and muntenance of the Shire Hall (or County Hall) in which they hold their meetings and in which the small army of county council officials have their offices, the keeping up and in good repair of courts police stations and other county buildings, the heensing of the itres, music-halls, rice-courses motor cars etc. the making and keeping in report the main roads and county bridges (less than 100 years ago a man could be executed for dunaging a county Indge, so important were these structures held to be to the community), the building and supervision of pauper lunatio asyluma reformatories, and industrial schools, the protection of wild birds, the prevention of pollution of streams and rivers, the inspection of weights and measures, and the stamping out of swine fever, foot and mouth disease, and other plagues among domestic animals To perform all these numerous functions the county council has to appoint a large number of inspectors, clerks, and other officials. The London County Council has to employ over 20,000 people i

More and More Duties

You would think that the above list of duties was chough to keep the council and its staff busy without any further responsibilities, but in 1894 the County Councils received from Parliament the oversight of the working of the U.D.C.s, the R.D.C.s, and the Parish Councils, whilst in 1902 supreme control over all the public elementary schools within the "administrative county," and the responsibility for the county's higher education was also laid upon their shoulders. Then, too, they have received power to regulate shop hours, and to appoint inspectors to see that the hours of work in shops are duly observed, also to regulate motor-car traffic, and to preserve ancient monuments.

The control of the County Police is not entirely in the hands of the County Council, but is shared between a number of councillors of the County Council, and an equal number of J.P.'s appointed by the Justices of Quarter Sessions (see p. 113). This Joint Committee appoints a Chief Constable to organise and command the Force,

RATES AGAIN

You will at once recognise that all these things cost money, and must be paid for. It is true that the Chairman, Aldermen, and Councillors—all honour to them for it—take no pay for the time and thought they give to the affairs of the county. But the officials have salaries, and buildings have to be erected and kept in repair. How, then, are all those things paid for? In the usual wey—that is, by "levying a rate" upon all people in the county area, who own or occupy land or houses. This "county rate" does not, however, yield money enough, nor would it be fair to put all the cost upon occupiers of land or houses. Consequently the central government, that is, the Imperial Parliament, makes certain grants out of the

general taxes to counts councils to defray part of the cost of the schools and teachers, main roads, public vaccinators, medical officers of health, inspectors of nuisances police, etc., etc. Generally when a large amount of money is required—as for instance for the luiding of a County Hall or School or Police Court or a large bridge, the Local Government Board will give the County Council permission to borrow the requisite sum. But in such cases it is always provided that the loan shall be repaid by instalminis spread over 30 to 60 years. Recently, owing to motor traffic the cost of road repairing his become very heavy and just of the money received for motor car licences is now handed over to the County Councils to help towards the upbeep of the highways. Grants are also made by the load Board for this purpose

A CITIZEY & OPTORTUNITIES

Very many of you when you attain to manhood or womanhood, will be possessed of a vote either for Parliament, or for the Local Councils we have been retained about Probably you will have votes for both Avoic is a trust which you must not highly regard. Take a keen interest in all matters of Government. The Local Councils are open to any one who wishes to enter public life. You therefore will have your opportunity of taking an active part in the government of your town or country. It is it is duty as well as the privilege of the citizen to see to the efficiency of his local government. It is work well worth doing and it is all the more honourable because it is honorary. A good citizen actuated by a desire to serve his fellowmen will find in the Local Councils a wide fold of useful social service.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND

1. Are you living under a City or Borough Conneil: County Council; an Urban District Council; or a Parish-

Council! You may be under more than one. If so, discover which is your authority for sanitary matters, which for mainreads, which for elementary education, and which for higher

education.

2. Name the Chairman of the Council under

3. Who are the Lord-Lieutenant and the High Sheriff of your County? What functions are performed by these unpaid officers of the county?

4. If your town or village has not a Free Library or Public Baths, what steps would have to be taken to secur

one or other of these advantages ? .

CHAPTER VIII

RIFLS AND TAXES

Wip Necessary

Lot have all heard of the rate-collector even if you have never met him. For some reason or other he has earned an unfortunate reputation and people are apt to speak slightingly of him and of his task. And yet a collector of the rates or of the taxes performs services as necessary to the community as those of almost any other public servant. The fact is we all dislike having to pay rates and taxes, and we visit our dislike upon the person whose duty it is to collect them.

You have learnt in the preceding chapters of many things that have to be done by the Government for the people as a whole. An Army and Navy have to be maintained at enormous expense, amounting between them to scores of millions of pounds per annum. Then the Schools, the Civil Service, the Judges and Courts of Law, Old Age Pensions, Insurance against Sickness or Unemployment, and the payment of interest on the National Debt, to monition nothing further, absorb a vast number of millions more. How is all this tremendous amount of money raised? The answer is by the Tuzzes (often called the "King's Taxes") levied upon all of us by Tailament.

Coming down from these national matters to those of

local importance, we find that money is required by the various local councils, to meet the cost of maintaining the police force, to pay for paving, lighting, cleaning, and, watering the streets and roads, for the erection of buildings and offices, as well as for the salaries of the numerous clerks, inspectors, and officials who use these offices. Sometimes, when large expenses have to be met, a Council has to borrow money-as, for instance, for the construction of . waterworks, or gas and electricity works. In such cases, besides the ordinary expenses, the Council has to pay interest on the borrowed money, and also to repay yearly a portion of the principal sum. You see, therefore, that on a lesser scale the Town, County, and other Councils have to levy taxes, like the Imperial Parliament. We call these local taxes the Rates. Having been elected by the free vote of the burgesses or householders, the Council taxes the town, like Parliament taxes the nation.

THE RATES

As perhaps you have heard more about the Rates than the taxes, let us consider them first. People often gramble about the rates and complain that they are "too high," forgetting perhaps that we cannot have all the conveniences and advantages of civilised life without paying for them. Still, there is no doubt that some Local Authorities; have been very extravagent, and have borrowed money and speat the rates in a prodigal manner. The only remedy for that is to send better men to the Council, who will see that the public mency is expended economically as well as wisely. Efficiency, you have learned, is generally costly, but there is no excuse for waste or extravagance.

. But before you can understand anything about Rates

and Rating, which is the most complicated portion of all our legal system, you must learn something about the origin of the Poor Law and of the Poor Rates, which were the first of all rates, and to which every householder is compelled to contribute.

THE POOR LAW

If you think of it a man is never naily destitute if he has a cottage in which to live a bit of land on which to grow food the right to run a low or a few sheep, pigs, geese, or fowls upon a common to gather stocks in the wood, or cut turf or peat for fuel. He may have little or no money, but he has the wherewithal to be sheltered, warned, and ted and that is a long way from being destitute. To be a landless man was a term of repreach in early times. Up to the dissolution of the monasternes even the poorest had pre-tically all these things, and except in bid seasons when the crops failed, they managed to get along and to avoid starvation.

Whatever the faults of the monasterns, they afforded great help to poor folk in times of furning and distress, feeding and supporting many who would otherwise have pershed. They seem also to have stood between the great lords and the peasants, adaing with the poor in

many a dispute

When, therefore, in 1536 the monasteries and abbeys began to be suppressed, the humblest workers lost a kind friend, and as the new landlords were often very grasping, and, not content with what they had got as a gift from the King, or had bought at a very small price, began to enclose the common hads, and at the same time to convert much of the land which had formerly been tilled into pasture for sheep, you will understand that large

numbers of the peasants fell into great poverty. To add to their misery, the coinage also was tampered with, and wages were paid in bad money. It is not surprising to learn, therefore, that in 1601 the first Poor Law¹ appears on the Statute Book. You can remember that it was this Act which first of all instituted Overseers of the Poor—officers who are regularly appointed up to the present time (see p. 72). The Overseers were ordered to raise, "weekly or otherwise," the necessary funds for relieving the poor by taxing every inhabitant in the parish. In this we see the beginning of the "poor rate" which is with us to this day.

No more striking example can be found in the whole of our history of the disastrous effects of ovil rule, than the long, and story of the attempts made in the last 350 years to remedy the impovertisiment of the people that began in 1586. Soores and scores of Poor Law Aots have been passed by Parliament, and there is still much to do. In 1905 a Royal Commission was appointed to consider the working of the Poor Laws, and to propose remedies. The Report of the Commission, issued in 1909, coupies over 1200 pages of a large volume, and no doubt when you come to engage in political life you will both hear and read of many suggestions made in that Report for the reform of our Poor Law—and it needs a great deal of reform.

THE GUARDIANS

In early days each parish had to support its own poor; but that system proved unsatisfactory, as some parishes had very few paupers, whilet others had large numbers. Sometimes, indeed, a great landowner would pull down the cettings in his parish so as to drive his labourers to live in another parish, which would be responsible for them in times of unemployment, sickness, or distress. So great were abuses of this Find that in 1834 the parishes were grouped together into "Unions," of which there are non-657 and the duties of relieving the poor were transferred from the Overseers to new authorities called Boards of Guardians.

The Overseers nowakays have really nothing to do with poor relief, and cone in themselves chiefly as you learnt in the last chapter with the collection of the Rates and with the preparation of certain lists about one of which—the Valuation I ist—we shall speak directly

The Boards of Guardians who are elected in April by the ratepsyer, sometimes on the same day as the Local Councils, held office for three years. To them as enterthe the ministration of part of the money raised by the Oversers. They perform their duty chiefly through "re lieting officers" who must visit promptly those who apply for rokef, at d give immedia'o and if necessary, and report upon each case at the nix meeting of the Guardians, who will then decide what further steps are to be taken

It used to be the practice of the Guardians, more than it is at present, to discourage the system of outdoor relief—re the giving of money or goods—and to compatible poor and helpless to accept, undoor relief—re to enter the workhouse. Since the grant of old age persons to old folk over 70, there is a marked tendency towards helping the poor to keep up their own homes, however humble and poverty-stricken. It is often imposable in the workhouse to arrange for husband and wife to remain together, and for their children to be with them but the administration of "outdoor relief" is attended with great difficulty, and is open to much alies. There

are always tramps and wastrels, who, if they can get free food and clothing, will never do a "hand's turn" of work, Such as these are likely to be encouraged by a too free use of outdoor relicf. The great problem, therefore, is to assist the deserving poor only-those who by illness or misfortune have come to grief-and to place them on their feet again, whilst rigorously suppressing the incorrigible loafer. The citizen of the future has one of his greatest tasks in solving this problem of how to help those that deserve help, without making the rates and 'taxes too heavy for the others, and without encouraging the drones to make the nation keep them.

The Guardians also enforce the Vaccination Acts. For this purpose they appoint a Public Vaccinator, who is a doctor, and a "Vaccination Officer," who goes round.

to see that no one evades the law.

THE POOR RATE

And now, after having learnt a little about the Poor Law and how it compels every citizen to contribute to the relief of his poorer brethren, let us for a few moments study the way in which the poor rates are fixed. It is only reasonable that, as every householder is forced to pay poor rates, he or she should know something about the way in which these imposts are levied, and how the money is spent. It would take a volume to go into the matter in any detail, so we must content ourselves with a few broad statements of the general method of procedure.

If you are not a householder yourself, you might ask your parents, or the person in whose house you live to show you the "Demand Note" for the poor rate. These notes come in half-yearly to every householder, and very unpleasant consequences follow if the money is not paid. If you examine this note you will see that the Union in which you live, and also the Parish, are mentioned in the heading, then your name and address appear, and then in a very direct manner, which does not sound at all polite, you find some words like these — The Overseers of the Foor demand payment of the Foor Rate, etc., etc." Underneath are figures showing how the total sum you have to pay is mide up. Sometimes, especially in country distincts, other items, such as the Expanses of the Gaardians and Overseers, are included under the name of the Poor Rate. At the foot of the Note you will observe the name of the Assistant Overseer who as you leant on p. 73 is the officer who does most of the actual work in the collection of the latter.

MAKING THE INCOMENTS

And now let us ascertain how the Overseers contrive to make wealthy men pay more to the poor rate than those who can only afterd a little for it would be manufestly unfair for every one to be compelled to pay the same amount. Our system of riting roughly secures that the rich shall contribute more than the poor by looking at the kind of houses in which they both hise, and calculating the ' net annual value" of these houses. The Over-cers perform this duty of estimating or "assessing" the "annual ratiable value" of all the land, houses, and buildings in their district, and when they have made out their Valuation List, they aftix a copy of it upon the doors of the churches and chapels in the Union, and exhibit it in certain other places to which the public have necess. It is fairly easy for the Overseers to discover what reat a man pays for his house, but in cases where a man owns his house and pays rent to nobody, they have to make a guess as near as they can of the rental at which the premises might be expected to "1cs" from year to year. If an owner, or occupier, thinks he has been "assessed" too high—that is, if he considers that the Overseers have over-valued the "annual rateable value" of his premises—he can appeal to the Assessment Committee of the Gnardians, and give reasons why he thinks the Assessment too high; and, if his reasons are good, the Assessment Committee may reduce the valuation.

The Assessment having at last been duly fixed, the figure becomes of great importance. Let us suppose that a householder finds that the "net annual value" of his house has been assessed or fixed by the Overseers at £30. Henceforward that householder will find that not only his poor rate, but also his other rates will be based upon that figure. The word "rate" comes from the Latin "ratio," and means a "proportion"; and the share a man pays of the local taxes is "in proportion to" the rent at which he is "assessed." Thus, if the local rates in your town come to Gs. Sd. in the £, it means that for every £ at which the Overseers have assessed your rent, you must pay 6s, 8d. per annum, The man, therefore, whose house is assessed at £30 per annum will pay thirty times 6s. 8d., i.e. £10 yearly to the Rate Collector, or £5 every half year, You may very probably find that the 1ent you pay to the landlord is a little higher than the "annual nateable value" at which you are assessed. That is because the Overseers, in order to arrive at the net rateable value, deduct the cost of repairs, etc., necessary to keep the premises in sound condition from the "gross estimated rental."

INEQUALITY OF THE RATES

The above plan of raising money is a rough and ready way of dealing with a difficult problem—the problem of making each man pay his proper share—neither too much nor too little. Some well-to do people, who could casily afford to pay more, will live in little bouses to escape paying a large sum to the rates. On the other hand, shopkeepers, who are obliged to take a heavily-raised house for the purposes of their tride, often pay an undue share. The rates vary enormously in different parts of the country, and are aften heaviest when they should be lightest. Thus, in London for instance, there are Boroughis in the Last End where the various rates amount to over 10) in the £. A man therefore inhabiting "a £50 house" in those parts will pay £25 or more to the rate-collector, as well as his visit to the landlerd. This, you see, is a very groevous hardship and in poor districts the people often complain bitterly of the burden of the rates.

One of the reasons of this inequality in the rates is that in some parts of London and in certain towns and districts in the country, there are large numbers of casual lationers, who in times of distress or of lad trade become a charge upon the rates, that is, they receive "outdoor ralit," or they have to be supported in the northouse. In such districts naturally the "poor rate" is very high, since it requires a large sum of money to relieve the necessations assess.

OTHER RATES

If you examine the next Demand Note that comes into your house, you may find another rate mentioned beside the poor rate, viz. the "General District Rate," called in Boroughs the "Borough Rate" Sometimes these

90 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

rates are demanded upon separate Notes, sometimes on the same paper. No uniformity of practice seems to be observed in all districts. In fact, the whole subject of local taxation is conspicuous for the number and variety of the rates, and of the authorities that may levy them, and the purposes to which they are applied. There is no more complicated portion of our laws than that dealing with the rates. If you should ever become a member of your District, County, or Town Council, you will soon find this out for yourself. It would be well if Parliament could find time to simplify the whole of our rating system, but it would be such a gigantic task that the legislature shrinks from attacking it. Usually the Borough Rate, or General District Rate is heavier than the poor rate, because it represents the money that is to be spent upon all those things which you read about in the last chaptersewers and drains, paving, lighting, and cleansing of the thoroughfares, and all the other expenditure incurred, for the improvement of the town or district, and for the general benefits of its inhabitants. The amount each ratepayer must contribute towards these objects depends entirely upon the annual rateable value of his house or land, or of the premises in which he carries on his trade, and this figure-you will remember-is fixed by the Overseers first of all for the purposes of the Poor Rate. So you see now very clearly how important it is for a householder to be correctly "assessed." If the Overseers overestimate the net annual value of his premises, then he not only pays too much in poor rates, but in every other rate flow ea

People so imes speak of gas and water rates. But are no really rates, since the householder pays for , has actually consumed, and not a sum bearing 1 proportion to his sent.

THE TAXES

If you are fond of figures it may interest you to know that every year the Government requires a sum of about £4 for every man, woman, and child in Great Britain and Ireland to provide "Rovenue wherewith to pay for our soldiers, sailors, pulses civil servants, postmen as well as for the battleships, guns and other armaments for the Nava and Arms, also to meet the interest upon, and to pay off lit by bit the immerse introval debt contracted in time of war by our incestors. As there are infillious of people—children for instance—who cannot carn £1 a year, it is plun that some tolks must pay a very much greater sum into the National Ledequer.

INCOME TAX

The device employed to make men with big incomes pay more than the men with small means is called the Income Tax. I very year a min has to state truly (be can be heavily fined if he gives falso information) the amount of his income. This information goes to the Surreyor of Juliand Revenue, who then sends him a notice that he must pay before a certain date such an amount of Income Tax. Speaking generally a man must jay 9d out of every £ that he receives as dividends, rent or interest on money. These were the figures in force at the time this book was written, but they may be varied at the pleasure of Parhament. The Income Tax is always fixed for the year when the Chancellor of the Erchequer langs in the "Budget Enli" (see p. 21). You should look out, therefore, next April when the Chancellor introduces his Budget and see whether any alteration is made

in this tax. To lessen the hardship upon the poorer classes, nobody pays income tax whose entire income from all sources is less than £160 per annum. Thus the man with (say) £180 per annum only pays tax, upon the excess above £150, that is upon £20. But on the other hand, very rich men with over £5000 per annum pay a super-tax, i.e. a much heavier income tax than men with less than that amount. In Germany even the working man with wages of only 18s. a week has to pay income tax.

DIRECT AND INDERECT TAXES

Since a man pays the income tax directly into the hands of a Government Official this tax is called a direct tax. Other direct taxes are those like gun licences, dog liconces, carriages and motor-car licences, etc., etc., which have to be taken out at a post office. The money in that case is also paid over directly to an officer of the government. Then, too, the stamps that you buy to put upon your letters, or which you put on a receipt for payments over £2 in value, are direct taxes. There are, however, a great number of taxes which are not paid directly over to the Government, but which get into the Exchequer in rather a roundabout way. When, for instance, you buy a nound of tea, though you may not know it, you are paying a tax to the Government in an indirect manner. Every purchaser of a glass of beer, wine or spirits, or ounce of tobacco is contributing indirectly to the Revenue. How does he do this? Take the case of tea as an illustration. The man or merchant who buys the tea in India or China and "imports" it into this country, is not allowed by the Customs Authorities to retail it to the public until he has paid a tax of a few pence (at the time of writing 5d.) on every pound. This tax he, of course, adds to the cost of the tea, and thin he adds his profit to arrive at the price at which it shall be retrilled to the consumer When, therefore, the housewife comes out of the shop with a pound of tea in her braket, for which she perhaps pays 1s. 8d, she has puid a tax upon the tea just as really as if she had first handed 1s. 3d to the shopkeeper for the tea, and then gone outside and pad 5d to a government official for the tea tax. In our country we try to tax only the lexures and not the necessities of life tea has only been known in Lingland for about 00 years it cannot really be called a accessity, though many people have come to think it so, whilst we could certainfy line willout intoxicating liquors and tolacco. These are all decimed luxures, and are taxed accordingly.

But we cannot have without corn and meat, and these things are not taxed, though you will find that some political leaders suggest that food ought to be taxed

Effect of Taxes Taxes inevitably make commodities dearer, so it would

be a hardship on the very poor to tax food. These are, however, pointed subjects insutted to this little book, which is written simply to tell you about the position the criticen in the State, and the duties of the State towards him, and of him towards the State. I ou will, however, not escape from the question of the taxation of food when you come to manhood or womanhood, and anless you bring sound and accurate knowledge to bear upon such matters, you will not know which way to vote. Try, therefore, to get at the basic principles of taxation, and thus prepare your mind for applying these principles to your politics. At present one of the principles that governs the taxation of this country is to regard taxes as

unfortunate necessities, and levied solely to raise Revenue. Another principle is that taxes should press as lightly as possible upon the poorest members of the community. and that as few things as possible should be taxed, and these in the nature of luxuries. Thus we tax tea, wine. spirits, and tohacco, but not food; carriages and motorcars, but not tradesmen's carts or motor-lorries; dogs kept. for pleasure, or hounds for hunting, but not the shepherd's faithful companion or the blind man's guide. Wealthy men have to pay for leave to keep butlers; footmen. grooms and menservants generally, also for displaying a "coat of arms" upon the panels of their carriages, etc., but there is no tax upon the less wealthy housekeepers who can only afford to keep a female domestic servant. No country in the world levies so few taxes as we do upon imports. Whether that is a sound policy or not is the battleground of the great controversy between Protection and Free Trade-a subject of the highest importance, and one upon which you should keep an open mind until you have mastered all the facts.

CUSTOMS AND EXCISE

To collect the Revenue upon all the tea, tobacco, wine, etc., that come into the country a small army of officials is required. You have, no doubt, read in various story books of exciting encounters between revenue officers and smugglers. Every rocky bit of coast-line has its "amugglers are" and some romance connected therewith. What is snuggling? It is simply an attempt to get goods into the country without paying "customs duty." Tobacco, silk, lace and brandy were the favorried duty." Tobacco, silk, lace and brandy were the favorried the enugglers thate, and even to this day there is a certain amount of evasion of the revenue

reason for so doing, because we have in our country a system of voting which depends chiefly upon the property a man owns or occupies, and for which poor rates are paid. There has long been in England a principle that there should be no taxation without representation. that is, no one should be asked to contribute money for the purposes of the State or of his locality, without having an opportunity of expressing an opinion upon how the money should be spent, and whether indeed any tax or rate should be levied at all. The ordinary citizen expresses his opinion by his vote, and that is why Rates ... Taxes, and Votes are so closely associated. At present, practically every male householder or occupier in town or country over 21 years of age, who has paid his poorrate, possesses the "parliamentary franchise," i.e. the right to vote at the elections of members of Parliament; and male lodgers can claim a vote if they occupy a room. worth £10 a year. Householders and occupiers of premises of the value of £10 per annum, whether men or women, can vote at other elections provided they have paid their rates. All shop assistants, coachmen, lodge-keepers, care-' takers, porters, labourers, etc., occupying houses or rooms which would qualify them for householders, are entitled to be put on the register of voters, although they may pay neither rent nor taxes.

It behoves every citizen to ascertain for himself whether he is qualified for a vote, and to see that his name is duly placed on the register. Claims must be sent in to the Overseers before August 20th in each year.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

1. Consult "Hazell's Annual" or "Whitaker's Almanack," and ascertain how much was expended last year out of the

taxes upon (1) the Army , (2) the Navy , (3) the Civil Service , (4) Lilucation, (5) Old Ago Pensions, (6) Interest on the

National Debt

2 How was the National Debt incurred? Are we maying

at nff f 3 How much is the Poor Rate in the £ in your town or dutrict! How much also is the Il-rough linte or

General District Bate? What is the total per L of your rate # 3 4 Who is your Assistant Overvoor and who is the Clerk

to the Guardians! How many Relieving Officers does your Board of Guardians employ ! 5 Name the Medical Officer of Health and the Inspector of Ausances for your Parish or District. Are those officers

paramently appointed or etterwise! 6 Consult the reference looks named in Questim I to ascertain how much Revenue was raised last year from (1) the income tax, (2) the tex tax, (3) spirit tax, (4)

beer tax 7 From the same volumes find what we pay in tax on every lb of ten and tobacco and sugar, how much on

every gallon of " proof spirit, and how much on every barrel of beer

8 How much does a dog lurnes cost ! I listes and taxes are said to be ' payments made by all for the good of all " How far is this true !

10 Are church and chars! buildings assessed to the ratest

CHAPTER IX

COURTS AND JUDGES

THE COMMON LAW

Ir everyone observed the Golden Rule, and did to his neighbours as he would that they should do unto him, there would be no need for Courts and Judges, Fines and Penatites, Prisons and Policemen. But among the millions of citizens there are always some who act unjustly towards their fellow-men, and we must, therefore, have some authority to settle disputes, and to decide what punishment must be meted out to those who commit crimes, or otherwise break the law.

Like every great institution in our land, the law has very slowly grown into what it is at present. Far away in the distant past, long before the Norman Conquest, our Saxon forefathers had their rules and customs by which land was bought or sold, held, and cultivated, and by which crime was punished. They had their neetings or councils for arranging their local affsirs, and their rough-and-ready courts for trying personant their rough-and-ready courts for trying personal charged with crime. We should not nowadays approve of all their methods either of trial or of punishment, but they believed in a public trial, and that ao man ought to be a judge in his own cause, or take the law into his own hands. These are sound principles of justice which we hold to this day. It is certain that no people

in the world except perhaps the Rimans, had so strong a sense of law and order as our "rude forefathers of the limitlet" When William the Conqueror established hunself in this country by force of arms, he found a number of customs and laws existing which he was far too wise to try to uproof. The Normans had no written laws of their own to Iring with them when they invaded this country where Kings had been lawgivers. So in the 4th year of his raign when the work of conquest had been completed William or laine i that peace and security should be observed between his English and Norman subjects, and for this end he renewed the "Laws of Edward the Confessor with certain additions made by himself. What these lines were we do not exactly know, but this edict of the Conqueror shows that certain rules and customs the basis of our (ommon Law, were already firmly established among the linglish people as early as the reign of Edward the Confessor | These laws, probably never committed to writing were demanded regularly at the beginning of each new reign until Magna Charta in 1215 supplied the people with a more substantial foundation for their liberties. The latter great grant of liberties and privileges containing 63 clauses is so important that it was called by Lord Chatham 'the Bible of the hughsh Constitution, and by Hallato, "the Keystone of Fuglish Liberty '

You will read in your histories how both Henry I and Henry II were dotermined to establish a "reign of law," and that to those unlightened rulers—very different from Wilham Rufus and Stephen—we one largely the system of itinerant or travelling judges, who still carry the Royal Justice throughout the length and breadth of the land, and hold their Assizes or Sittings at the most important towns and edit.

Some of you may live in an Assize Town like Exeter. Leeds, Durham, Liverpool, and many others, and may have seen the Judges from the High Court of King's Bench. and may have wondered at all the pomp and ceremony with which they are received when they come to "clear the gaols" of prisoners awaiting trial, and to try "civil" causes" that are not taken up to London to be tried there. We shall learn more about these judges and about the Assize System later in the chapter, but what you should now understand is that the establishment of itinerant or travelling justices above all things developed and settled the Common law, which was in fact a careful selection from those usages which from time to time the commonsense of our countrymen pronounced to be valuable. The judges gave expression to the commonsonse of the community, and thus the law grew, and adapted itself to the needs of the people in the days when there was no Parliament to make laws for them.

make laws for them.

Thus gradually the general customs of the laud became fixed rules or laws which all had to obey. The rules were by no means always committed to writing or set down in any written statute or ordinance, but depended upon general acceptance for their support. For instance, it leaves that with us that the eldest son should be the heir of his father's estate; that a man charged with a crime should be tried by a jury of his fellow citizens, and that this jury should consist of "twelve good men and true"; that a man should meet his accuser face to face, and that he should be necounted innocent until proved guilty; that every alon, whether of high or low estate, should be equal before the law, etc., etc.

Our Common Lay is pre-eminently a native growth. Based on Saxon customs, moulded by Norman judges, and independent of foreign systems, it is, as Lord Ilicon says, "as maxed as our language and as truly national"

The Common Law has in recent times been extensively embodied in Statutes, i.e. Acts of Parliament, which have both extended and modified it, and have fixed the fines and penalties for its infraction. They have also mitigated its severity, for the old Common law was very strict and hard and narrow, and often here harship upon these who were little to blame.

As an instance of the severity of the Common Law, you may perhaps know that if a man borrowed money and fuled to repay his debt when he had promised to do so he could be east into prison and their kept until the debt was paid. You may think this an extremely foolish proceeding, for how could a man be expected to pay his debt if he were kept in prison and so presented from following his trade and earning money? Nevertheless, it is not long since Debtors Prisons were abolished. Those of you who have read Dickense 'Little Dornt' and the "Pickwick Papers' will recall that the famous author there describes with his customary vigour and vividness, the missiry of the imprisoned delitors, and the deplorable condition of their prisons.

EQUITY COURT OF CHANCERY

Now there were often occasions when people accidentally broke the Common Law and because hidde to so were penalties out of all proportion to their off nee, or perhaps they became the victims of some act of oppression by a nich and more powerful neighbour for which the Common Law afforded no redress. In these cases what were they to do? The liw offered no remedy, and so they

petitioned the King to interfere on their behalf, and to gramb them relief from the unreasonable fines or penalties to which they had become liable, or to protect them from the oppression and ruthlessness of some powerful personal enemy who threatened to deprive them of life or limb or livelihood. The King generally handed over these petitions to his Chancellor, who, as you will remember (see p. 42), was in early times a cleric. Thus the Chancellor became the administrator of the Royal Favour or "equitable jurisdiction of the Sovereign" as it was called.

When-as often happened-there was no law to fit the case, or when the Common Law Courts could not give adequate (Latin aequus) relief, the Chancellor's Court (or Court of Chancery as it was called) stepped in and secured Equity for the sufferer. For generations there was a lively jealousy between the Courts of Common Law and the Court of Chancery. The former objected to the interference of the latter, and watched the administration of Equity with a dislike that they did not conceal. The "equitable jurisdiction" of the Court of Chancery was founded on the supposed superiority of moral right over the strict letter of the law, and as Head of this Court the Chancellor was often spoken of as "the Keeper of the King's Conscience." You will gather then from what has been said, that the Court of Chancery or of Equity (for it is called by both names) was started with the idea of relieving the inequalities of the Common Law and of doing justice for the poor and oppressed. But it became, unfortunately, as the centuries rolled away, very dilatory in its action, and one to which none but the rich could afford to resort.

Those who have read Dickens's "Bleak House" will remember his tremendous indictment of the slowness and costliness of the Court of Chancery. Happily this charge is now a thing of the past. A great reform took place in 1873 when an Act of Parliament—the Judicature Act !—fused together the Courts of Common Low and of Equity No longer was a cutter in seeking to establish his rights to go infilter and thinker—first to a Court of Common Low, and then to a Court of Equity until his patience and purse were exhausted. A few memorable words in that famous Act must be quoted, for every citizen ought to know, if he goes to law,' that he will now have the benefit not merely of the strict his but also of its equitable interpretation. The words referred to are as follows—' In all matters on which there is any conflict or variance between the rules of Equity and the rules of Common Law in reference to the same matter the rules of Equity shall precait."

Notwithstanding the fusion of the Courts of Common Law and of Lquity it has been found convenient to maintain the old nunes, and assign some cases to the "Common Law Sule" and others to the "Chancery Sule of the High Court for instance all mutters appertaining to Mortgages, Trusts and Trustices Partnerships, the rights of Matriel Women, Infants and Lunatics, and the Specific Performance of Contracts are assigned to the Chancery Physics of the High Court Such cases are complicated and tedfore, quite units for decision by a jury Consuprently you will not find juries in a Court of Chancery

COUPT OF KINGS BENCH

The King's Bench Division or "Common Law Side of the High Court of Justice is presided over by the Lind Chief Justice of England. Most of the sensational cases you read about in the newspapers are tried by Judges of the Ring's Bench while the fact that it is the judges on

this side who "go ou circuit" to the Assiva Towns (see p. 100) renders this branch of the Judicature more familiar to people generally. In addition to the Kings Beich Division and the Chancery Division, there is yet another branch of the High Court of Justice, viz the Probate, Divorce, and Admiralty Division (see diagram, p. 111) which gives judgment on disputed Wills, Matrimonial Cisses, and Shipping affairs. It has two judges, the scalar of whom is called the President of the Division. (?):

ITINERANT JUSTICES

It generally happens that two judges are appointed to each of the eight circuits into which England and Wales are divided; one for criminal cases, one for civil cases. By civil cases we mean those difficulties between man find man which arise when one has a grievance against another -as for instance, when an employee is wrongly dismissed by his employer, or when a person slauders or libels another, or when a dealer supplies goods of an inferior quality to those which he promised to deliver, etc., etc., The Assizes meet in every county four times a year, in summer and winter for both criminal and civil cases, in spring and autumn generally for criminal cases only. The reception by the High Sheriff in his full uniform; the blowing of trumpets when the Judge enters and leaves his gilded coach; the picturesque javelin-men who walk beside it; the solemn service in the chief church; the magnificent scarlet robe of the criminal judge; all this outward show is symbolic of the dignified character of the proceedings, and of the majesty of the law. In olden times the King was accustomed to make a progress through the land dealing justice to his people, and the ceremonious observances still maintained at the Assizes represent the homogo

originally accorded to royalty. The Judges come from the "King's Bench, that is from the sent of Justice one occupied by the King himself and hence we pay the respect due to them as representatives of the King.

To Junes

British justice is renowned throughout the world for its impartiality and for its swiftness. It is true that we still sometimes speak of the laws delays and there no doubt is room for an acceleration of the pace at which the business of the Courts is carried through. But notwith standing these defects our system is recognised as one not excelled by that of any other country in the world Much of this excellence is attributable to the high character of the Bench-as the July's are collectively called You have read no doubt in your histories that in early time the Judges were appointed by the King and held office a his pleasure. That was a bad system because a Indee was afraid of being dismissed if he give a judgment dis pleasing to the Sovereign I on might search your history book for vourself and find out the name of the great measures in the time of William III which altered thu state of things and rendered the Judges irremovable by the Crown except on a count address to the Sovereign from both Houses of Parliament This grand independence of our Judges enalles them to dispense justice without the fear or favour of anyone, and as we believe in paying them very large salaries to raise them above all temptation of tribery, we have seemed a judicial system in which corruption such as you may occasionally read of in other lands, is quite unknown. There is no worse state into which any country can fall than when its Indiciary car be bought-that is, when they will take money from one party to deal unjustly towards another. As a good citizen you should be prepared to uphold the dignity of the Beach, by honouring the Judges, and by not grudging what may seem to you their very large salaries. It is of the utmost importance to each of us that the foundain of justice should be kept pure and free from the slightest suspicion of corrention.

You will read from time to time in the newspaper that His Majesty "has been pleased to appoint" Mr. So and So to the Bench. As a matter of fact the lower or "puisne" Judges are recommended for appointment by the Lord Chancellor, from among the leading barristers. The Prime Minister recommends to the King suitable candidates for the offices of Lords Justices and of Lord Chief Justice. Thus, again, you see that in accordance with our ancient way of doing everything in the name and under the authority of the Crown, the name of the chosen person is recommended to the King for appointment; and the King always appoints upon the advice of his Ministers. To enhance the dignity of their office the Judges of the High Court of Justice are offered a Knighthood. In the Courts they are always addressed as "My Lord." Outside the Courts they are usually spoken of as Mr. Justice ——. The higher judges are also made Privy Councillors, and therefore are addressed as "Right Honourable."

BARRISTERS AND SOLICITORS

The legal profession is divided into two branches— Barristers and Solicitors. Barristers are "called to the Bar," as it is termed, by one of the four ancient and honourable Societies of Lincoln's Inn, the Inner Temple, Middle Temple, or Gray's Inn. Leading barristers are raised by His Majesty to the rank of King's Counsel (K.C.) It is the sole privilege of barristers to appear and plead in the High Court and Courts of Appeal. They are always then robed in black gowns and wear wigs K.C.'s wear black silk gowns. Solicitors are legal agents acting for their clients, and employ barristers when the case requires careful advocacy before the Courts. Solicitors are entitled to appear in the County Courts, and Petty Sessional Courty, but even then, in difficult cases, it is usual to employ Couns 1—as burristers are called Solicitors conduct a wast amount of work that requires special training and expert legal knowledge—quite outside the work of the courts which of course are employed solely in deciding of a ties. They are admitted solicitors after examination by the Incorporated Law Society, and pay in annual fee to the Courtment for permission to practise.

THE LAW COURTS

When next you visit London you should go to the Law Courts in the Strind, and watch the course of a trid you will learn more from a few hours spent inside the Court than you can learn from reading any book. Remember that the Courts of Law are always open to the publications in o secret administration of justice in this country. You are not likely, however, to so a criminal trial at the Law Courts in the Strand. You should, if you wish to winces a criminal trial, visit the Court when the Assacs are held at your County Jown, or the Central Criminal Court at the Old Bailey, London which sits every month for the trial of prisoners who are charged with serious crimes committed in or about London.

THE COURTS OF APPEAL

Our legal institutions comprise many other courts than those so briefly described above.

. If the suitor is dissatisfied with the judgment of the High Court, it is open to him to appeal to still higher tribunals. He can carry his case to the Court of Appeal. where it will be heard by three "Lords Justices," who are of higher rank and wider experience than the Judges of the lower Courts. Lastly, if still dissatisfied with the result, he can take his cause to the House of Lords, where certain "Law Lords," presided over by the Lord Chancellor. will give a patient hearing to the case and then deliver a judgment which is absolutely final. There is no appeal from the House of Lords. Certain of the Law Lords are chosen because they have occupied, earlier in their career, some high judicial office. They are raised to a seat in the House of Lords, under the title of Lords of Appeal in Ordinary, with a life peerage (see p. 45). Of the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council as a Court of Appeal from the Colonial Courts and for Ecclesiastical Causes you have already heard (see p. 54).

COUNTY COURTS

If a man owes another some money and refuses to pay, he can be compelled to do so by the Courts of Law. Bit. if the sum is only a small one many people would rather suffer its loss than be put to so great an expose as would be incurred if the case were taken for trial to London, or even to the nearest Assize Town. To enable small debis to be recovered, as well as other minor disputes to be settled with as little cost as possible, a large number of smaller courts, called "County, Courts" were established.

in the year 1840. The County Court Judges, who are addressed in Court as "your Honour," are appointed by the Lord Chancellor. They each have a "circuit" under their charge, continuing a number of distinct courts. Lingland is divided into about five hundred districts and each judge holds his Court in each of his districts at frequent intervals. Claims for dibt or damages up the 2100 can be tried in the County Courts. A jury of eight men may be employed if suitors so desire, in cases where the sum in disjute is over \$5, and in cases involving more than £20 the parties of dissistisfied with the ruling of law of the County Court Judge, may a peal to the High Court of Justice.

PETTE SESSIONS

A great many criminal offences of a less serious character are never brought to the Assizes at all, or to the Old Buley (see p. 107) but are disposed of locally by the County or Porough Magistrates (see p 65) sitting either in latty Sessions or in Quarter Sessions. Let us take the lower court best, namely the Court of Potty Sessions The punishment of petty offences, such as being drunk and disorderly using foul language in the streets picking p chets assaults etc etc, are the staple business of these Courts. They also take note of any breaches of the local bye laws (see p 63) and are empowered to inflict fines upon parents who do not send their children to school. The police are very much in evidence in these courts which are in consequence called "Police Courts' When a very grave crime has been committed, the police first bring the presence to the Police Court and if the Magistrates, after hearing the charges and examining the witnesses think the case is outside

110 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

their powers, i.e., is too serious for them to deal with. they commit the prisoner to take his trial at the Quarter Sessions (see next chapter), or, if a very bad case, at the Assizes. The Depositions or Statements made by the accused and the witnesses are taken down in writing and read aloud to the prisoner, after which they are signed by the "deponents" and sent forward for the use of the higher court. Sometimes, but not if the charge is of a very grave character, the accused is "admitted to bail," that is. the prisoner's friends promise to pay a large sum of money if he does not appear for trial at the specified time. Sometimes the accused's own promise to appear is accepted, and he goes free until the day of the trial.' Sometimes again the police have not had time to get the witnesses together and to secure the necessary evidence. The magistrates may not feel inclined to allow the accused to be at large, and they "remand" him, that is, he is kept in prison for a period not exceeding 8 days before being again brought up before the Bench. If important witnesses cannot be found, or if there are other unavoidable delays, a prisoner may be "remanded" several times.

The Courts of Petty Sessions are presided over by two or more unpaid magistrates (a.e. Justices of the Peace), who are not—as a rule—trained in the law. They are, however, assisted by a Clerk who is a lawyer, and as already stated. (see p. 65) in London and the large towns where there are many cases daily to deal with, a Scipendiary Magistrate is appointed to relieve the magistrates of the work. There is no jury in a Court of Petty Sessions. The cases are such as can be dealt with by the magistrates alone, and summarily,—consequently this court is often spoken of as a court of "summary jurisdiction." In all the higher criminal courts, however, you will find a jury of

12 men.

The following thagrams show the relative runk of the Courts of Justice in this country --

Horse or Loans
(Linal Court of Appeal)
Court of Appeal

Court of Appeal
High Court of Justica.

Chancery Division hand a Bench Division Probate Division, and (whose Judaes go on Admiralty Division, circuit)

There are also the —

County Court Quarter Sea 1009 Coroners
(Civil Cause) (Crimunal Cause) Court.

(Criminal Case)

Ottotions for Discussion and Research

Petty bastions

I Which is your nevrest Assizo Town? When do the rest Assizo begin?

2 Where is your nearest County Court, and who is the County Court Judge of your district?

7 Where is your market Court of Petti Sections? Is it presided over by two Justices of the Pence, or is there a Stipendary Magistrato? 4 What is a Word in Chancery?? See "Loca

I What is a Word in Chancery "? (See "Lncy chipsedia Britannics," under heading "Infant")

5 What was the Habeas torque Act of 1679, and what rights does it socure to us f

6 Discuss how far tunishment should be (1) retributive.

6 Discuss how far junishment should be (1) retributive, (2) deterrint, and (3) reformatory

· CHAPTER X

COURTS AND JUDGES (Continued)

JUSTICES OF THE PEACE

Among the oldest and most valuable public servants in our land are the Justices of the Peace, persons who, by reason of their local importance, are entrusted with a Commission from the Crown to maintain the King's Peace, and to punish those smaller breaches of the law which we call offences rather than crimes. These magistrates are appointed by the Lord Chancellor, generally upon the recommendation of the Lord Lieutenant of the county, and were, up to quite recent times, always selected from among the county gentlemen of wealth and position. You have learnt, however, that the Chairmen of the County, Borough, and Urhan District Councils are, nowadays, Justices in virtue of their office. The very name of Justices of the Peace implies that their first duty is to keep down broils and tumults, or anything that would lead to a "breach of the peace." They had formerly to see that the roads were safe for travelling, and that robbers and highwaymen were hunted out and sent for trial at the next Assizes. Under the reigns of the Tudor and Stuart Kings the number of Justices was increased. and more duties were imposed on them by Parliament until they became practically the rulers of the county,

and when they met (as they still do) at Quarter Sessions, they not only tried the prisoners who were put before them but did many things for the regulation of the affairs of the county. For instance, they used to appoint constables to assist in preserving the peace, and also had charge of the main roads and of the county bridges, and it was the duty of the Justices to see that these were kept in good repair. Some of these very considerable powers they possess to this day. Many of their duties however have been placed elsewhere. You have learnt ("ee p 77) that the County Councils nowadays look after the main roads and bridges. The Justices have, however a share of control (see p 78) over the County Constabulary But in other directions they have a consalerable remeant of authority. They can issue "warrants for the apprhension of suspected people, also "summonses to bring people before them to answer certain charges

A warrant is an order for a suspected person's arrest A summons is an order requiring a person to present himself at the Court upon a certain day

The powers of the Justices are chiefly apparent when they sit at Petty or Quarter Sessions. For instance, if some neighbours dog lit you and you went in fear of being bitten again and your neighbour refused to keep the deg under control you could go to the nearest Court of Petty Sessions and ask the magistrates to issue a "summons" against the owner of the dog. This they would do, and a policeman would deliver the summons at the dog-owners house. At the next sitting of the monistrates the dog owner must appear, or send some responsible person, to explain why he did not keep the dog under control. If he did not appear or sent a substitute he could be arrested. If he could not give a

114 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

satisfactory explanation why the dog was allowed to be at large, the magistrates might order the dog to be put to death, or at all events kept strictly chained up.

QUARTER SESSIONS

Having learnt something about the Court of Petty Sessions, and of the magistrates who dispense justice in that Court, let us turn to the next of our Criminal Courts, in which the Bench is occupied by Justices of the Peace—those unpaid administrators of the law to whom the country owes so much.

At Quarter Sessions the magistrates can try much

more serious offences than those dealt with at Petty Sessions. As their name indicates they are held every quarter, and although two justices are enough to form a Court, a large number generally attend as the occasion is one of huch importance. The Court of Quarter Sessions is presided over by a Chairman, who is generally a man of high position in the county, and one with raily a man of mgn postnon in the county, and one with a good deal of legal skill—for you perhaps know that it is a tradition in our land that a county gentlemen, with large estates to manage, ought to study the law and be called to the Bar even if he does not practise afterwards.

Town, the Quarter Sessions of the Borough Magistrates presided over by the Recorder—a barrister of high ding, appointed by the Crown on the recommendation the Lord Chancellor. A jury is usually summoned to i the Chairman or Recorder at Quarter Sessions ery large powers of punishment—even penal servitude—are entrusted to this bourt, but murder and some of the very grave crimes campot be taken at Quarter Sessions and must be sent to the Assizes for trial.

THE TURN-PETTY AND GIAND

To serve on a jury is a duty which may, and general! sloes, full on every cutizen at some time or other in his life Juries are always employed in criminal cases at the Assize and at Quarter Sessions. There is too always a jury a Coroner's monests and sometimes they are demande in civil cases in the him s Bench Division at the Lav Courts in London and in the various County Court-Thus you see there are it not of occasions on which householder may but himself summoned for pary service In London inde I when there are so many courts an where all the very heavy cases are tried-many of their occupying several lays and even we ke-the burden a jury service is very great and tradesmen have sometime been runned by being kept so long from their busines But though these hardships undoubtedly occur, th method of trial by a jury of once fellow citizens ; rightly regarded as one of the greatest bulwarks of ou aneient liberries

In Figland Wales and Ireland the jury is chosen be them a long list of people living in the neighbourhoo. In a criminal trial it is the jury's duty to hear all that is said for and against the prisoner or defendant to listen twhat the judge tells them about the law and then to sawhether they think the prisoner 'guilty or' not guilty A very trivial jayment is made to jurors—Is a day, thoug special jurymen," drawn from a higher rank in his receive Els a day

The creat use of a jury is to determine questions of fact. When a number of men are taken at random, as very unlikely that they are all friends or commics the parties to is much more likely that they will is

116 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

unknown to them, and therefore will form an impartial tribunal

At present no woman ever serves upon a jury. You must decide for yourselves whether you think it would be wise to admit women to this arduous and often painful duty of citizenship.

The juries of which we have been speaking are styled in legal language Petty (i.e. small) juries. There is another jury of which you should know something, viz .the Grand Jury.

Though this is one of our most ancient legal institutions, quite a number of lawyers to-day think it superfluous. No doubt it had its uses in times past, but now, when the administration of justice is much more thorough, efficient and careful, there really remains very little for a Grand Jury to do. Nevertheless, just before the Assizes or Quarter Sess ons, a jury—generally drawn from among the J.P.'s for the county, and numbering twelve to twentythree persons-meets, and under the direction of the Judge goes very briefly over the charges that are brought against those awaiting trial. The jury sits in private (neither the prisoner nor counsel are present), and hears only the evidence in support of the charge. If they think that the charge appears to be well founded they mark "the bill of "indictment," "true bill," and the case proceeds to trial. the other hand, if-as very rarely happens-they er the indictment is not borne out by the evidence,

k it "no true bill," and the prisoner is at once

the remarkable tenacity with which we English cling to old institutions, we are slow to dispense ven the slender services of the Grand Jury.

THE STRONG APR OF THE LAW

You are sometimes told that civilisation has so far advanced that the Law no longer relies upon physical force for its authority, but it is accepted because it is "reasonable, and is obeyed "by popular consent." Do not be under any delunon upon this subject. The law rests to-day, as it always has done upon physical force The policeman is "the strong arm of the law," the executive officer, who by main force apprehends, and compels the law brother, whether man, women, or child, to come before the Judge And afterwards it is by physical force that the culprit is hilled to prison and compelled to perform distasticful tasks. Even a simple lige law of your town, such as that which directs that no rubbish or offensive matter shall be thrown into the streets, note for its validity upon physical force. What would happen if you broke this bye law? You would receive a "summons" from the magistrates to appear at their court and answer for your disregard of the bye-law If you took no heed of this summons you would soon find yourself arrested by some stalwart policeman, and before long you would be heavily fined If you declined to pay the fine, you would be forcilly taken to prison. If you struggled you would be placed in handcuffs. It is the same with every law you like to name Disobedience to its mandates renders you liable to compulsion by physical force

Seeing that our lives are made in Parliament by the representatives of the people, we are prepared to yield a ready consent to them, and to the application of physical force against these who wilfully break them

The policeman is therefore an officer to whom each and all of us are indebted for the maintenance of the law, and for the apprehension and safe-keeping of lawbreakers, as

well as for many other services to the public, such as the regulation of traffic, the protection and restoration of lost property, etc.

A private citizen has the right, and indeed ought to arrest anyone whom he sees in the act of committing a crime. The policeman, however, is endowed with larger powers. He may arrest a man on suspicion, even though he does not know for certain that a crime has been committed; he may even arrest a man simply because he looks as if he were going to commit a crime. In most cases. however, the policeman acts under the authority of a "warrant" granted by a magistrate.

SPECIAL CONSTABLES

Even at the present day every able-bodied man is liable to be compelled to serve as constable of his parish, - or to find a fit substitute; and the duty of preserving the mes to be undertaken by "special conof great disturbance—as for instance stables." In times the special constables are enrolled during a general str inary citizens. They wear a badge and are armed with Aruncheons. and are armed with th

THE IN CORONER'S COURT

The Coroner's Cou of accidents or sudden foul play. The Corond Council, is usually a m ter. A jury of at least

fert can hardly be termed a Court of in inquiry or inquest held in cases Justice. It is really ab death, whenever there is reason to sins come to his death by accident or suspect that a person 1 size who is appointed by the County edical man and often also a barris tavelve men assist him in deciding

the cause of death. When there is a vertice of murder or muralaughter necessitating the trial of the slayer at the Assecs tie Coroner can find over the wrinesses to give evidence at the trial and he sends the depositions is, the written statements of their evidence, to the Court before which the trial will take place.

Cornously also the Corner has to hold an inquest upon iterative troto that is buried money or valuables that are acculently discovered the ownership of which is not known or is in day are

AT A CITHINAL TRIAL

Nothing his been said so far upon the actual proordure inside the court at a trial As all the sensational criminal cases are fully reported in the newspapers an intelligent render som becomes familiar with the general method of conducting a criminal trial You have all read of the prisoner in the dock facing the judge, the jury in their box on one side of the judge and the barristers or counsel in win and gown scated in the space between the dock and the Pench | You know also of the ewearing in of the jurymen to well and truly try the prisoner at the bar, you have heard about the reading to the accused of the indictment se the charge or arrangement made against I in and the question put by the Clerk of Arraigns Do you plead Guilty or 'Not Guilty !' These must be quite commonplaces to you it you read the and that the witnesses for the Crown are then called and destre what they know of the circumstances and what tley saw with their own eyes. They must not say what

120 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

they were told by somebody else-that is, they must not give "hearsay evidence" The accused's counsel then "cross-examines" these witnesses, which does not mean that he examines them crossly, but that he is at crosspurposes with them, and so tries to shake their evidence. and to prove that they were mistaken in what they saw, or in what they think are the facts of the case.

Then it becomes the turn of the Counsel for the Defence to call his witnesses in favour of the prisoner, and then for the Counsel for the Crown to cross-examine them. Since 1898,1 a prisoner may give evidence on his own behalf, i.e. he may speak for himself in his own fayour. But he must then submit to cross examination by the prosecuting counsel, and unless he is really innocent of the charge, he is much more likely to do himself harm than good by going into the witness box.

After the conclusion of the evidence the jury are addressed by the respective counsel, and lastly the Judge "sums up," and points out to the jury the strength or weakness of the cases for the prosecution and the defence. He also explains the law to the jury, and finally dismisses them to consider their verdict. The jury are locked up, and no one may speak to them or influence them in any way whilst they are deliberating-often upon the life, and always upon the liberty of the man in the dock. When at last they have arrived at a unanimous verdict,they return to the court, and their spokesman or foreman declares that they have found the prisoner either "Guilty" or "Not Guilty." If "not guilty" the judge instantly discharges the prisoner, and if "guilty" he proceeds to pronounce sentence. The sentence, of course, varies with the gravity of the offence, and with the known character of the prisoner. He may be lightly dealt with, or the 1 61 & 62 Vict, c. 86.

leavest rentence allowed by the law may be inflicted. You must reme after that the judge earned do just as he likes—he must not inflictany penalty except that allowed by statute. Nevertheless, judges have a large discrition in the nature and in the severity of the punishments they award.

Until the year 1907, there was no appeal from the decision of the judges in the Criminal Courts, but in that year the Criminal Appeal Act was passed which give to a controlled person for the first time a right of appeal. The appeals are heard by three judges of the High Court who may quash diminish or increase the sentence of the lower court if they deem it wrong, too severe or too leneal.

A CARL ACTION

Though as said above you are very likely to be acquimited with the main f stores of a criminal trial, you may not be equally familiar with the process of law known as a civil action—that is one in which a plaintie seeks to establish his rights, or obtain damages from someone, the 'defendint' by whom he has been injured—either in his husiness, prop rty, or person or character

The first step in a civil action is "the issue of the writ." You have here reproduced unactual writ in which the names only are suppressed—the rest being copied from the actual writ in a very well known even which occupied the attention of the court for several divis

^{1 7} E4 VII c 2L

122 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

A WRIT

In the High Court of Justice, 1909 G No. 1407 King's Bench Division.

Plaintiff and Plaintiff

C---- D----

Defendant.

EDWARD THE SEVENTH by the Grace of God of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and of the British Dominions beyond the Seas, King, Defender of the Faith to

of (here follows C.D.'s address)

WE command you that within 8 days after this service of the Writ on you inclusive of the day of such service you do cause an appearance to be entered for you in an action at the suit of

A----- B-----

And take notice that in default of your so doing the Plaindiff may proceed therein, and Judgment may be given in your absence.

Witness Robert Threshie Baron Loreburn Lord High Chancellor of Great Britain the 21st day of July in the year of our Lord, 1999.

You see from the above, that the writ is issued in the name of the King, again illustrating the way in which we English preserve ancient forms and traditions. For enginally, every miscleed, even a slander, was held to be likely to cause a breach of the King's Peace, and was an offence against the King's Majesty itself. It was therefore proper for the King to summon the misdoer to his Court, and for the Chancellor who was his Registrar of

Seen tary to see actually to the issue of the writ Indees d upon (i.e written on the back of) this writ were the words

"The Plaintiff's Claim is for Damages for Slander," and then followed a statement of when and where the slander was uttored

The Defendant upon whom a writ is served—whether he likes it or not—must arrange for—an appearunce to be entered, 'that is he must give the Plaintiff and the Crown some acknowledgment that he has received the writ, and is prepared to answer the claim

SUBSECUENT STEPS IN THE ACTION

This first step in the action is followed by a series of other steps. The plaintiff next drives up (a barrister is generally employed to do this work) a "Statement of Claim, which sets out with great precision exactly what the plaintiff complains of, and the rimedy that he desired the court to grant. The Defendint then follows with a "Defende," showing as fir as possible that the plaintiff he suffered no injury, and really has nothing to complain of

You will not expect this short account of an Action at Law to go into further details

THE TRIAL

Eventually—generally after some weeks or morths, the parties have got everything in readiness, and the case is "put down for trial" and waits its turn in the list. As the day approaches the witnesses are brought together—sometimes they have to be fetched from the provinces or even from far distant parts of the world, and the case

is ultimately called on for trial. The counsel for the plaintiff states the facts to the jury, and then calls his witnesses to verify and support his statements. These witnesses are cross-examined by the defendant's counsel. Then the counsel for the defence opens his case and calls his witnesses, who in turn are subjected to a crossexamination by the plaintiff's counsel. Then each counsel reviews the whole case from his client's point of view; the judge "sums up"; and the jury retire to consider their verdict. In the actual case from which this sketch of these proceedings is taken, the jury found damages for the plaintiff to the amount of several thousand pounds. The plaintiff took his case to the Court of Appeal which disagreed with the court below, and relieved the plaintiff of the payment of the excessive damages which the jury had fixed.

When no jury is employed, the judge alone decides the matter. In difficult cases he often reserves judgment

for prolonged consideration.

In the County Courts the whole procedure is much simplified and shortened, and there is no tedious waiting. The judge hears the case as soon as the parties are ready for the trial.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

Where is your nearest Court of Quarter Sessions held?
 If you live in the county, who is the Chairman of your

Quarter Sessions; if in a Borough, who is the Recorder ?

3. Name some of the Justices of the Peace residing in

your locality.
4. What persons—other than women—are exempted from

jury-service?
5. "Five shillings and costs, or seven days." This is the

type of antence often delivered by the magnetates. Discussion in payment of a fine lib it in accordance with the principle of the equality of all men before the law? Do you see any objection to allowing poor men to be liberated on bail, and all weed to ray off the fine by instalments?

CHAPTER XI

SOLDIERS AND SAILORS

THE BRITISH NAVV

We usually speak of "Soldiers and Sailors," but it would be more correct, perhaps, to roverse the order of these words, and to say "Sailors and Soldiers," for the good reason that the Navy is the "Senior Service," and our. "First Line of Defence"! You will see at once why the Navy must always stand foremost among the armed forces of the Crown. Since Great Britain and Ireland are islands, we rely upon the Navy rather than upon the Army to repel any invasion of a foreign foe, and unless the sea were kept free from the warships of the enemy our soldiers would not be able to go to the assistance of any portion of the Empire that might be in danger.

We therefore need a Nevy strong enough not only toguard the Homeland from attack, but in time of war to keep open and safe the "sea-paths" along which tuding vessels bring our food supplies and the raw materials for our factories. That is what we mean when we say that it is essential to the very existence of the Empire that the British Navy shall be supreme at sea. Statesmen of both the great parties recognise this all-important principle, and when discussing naval questions in Parlinnent are ready to sink personal and political differences, and combine in the maintenance of a powerful fleet. If they disagree at all upon this momentous subject it is only on the question whether the money voted for the ships is enough, and whether it is being wirely spent.

It has, in the past been the policy of our country to leave a fleet strong enough to be a match for the fleets of any two nations that might be arrayed against it. The cry of "two keels to one" mens that for every ship built by the next strongest neval power we ought to build two. But as buttle-hips and cruisers have now grown so hugo and costly it is becoming a heavy drain upon this country to maintain a Flect which shall be large. enough to resust any possible combination of foreign powers and also to protect our colonial possessions. Proposals for lumitation of armaments made to other nations have as yet been unsuccessful. It is a great satisfaction to us therefore to in I that Canula Australia, and the other Dominions beyond the Scas are now engaged in discussing questions of nival defence and considering the hest methods of co-operating with the Motherland in a great defensive scheme. You know very well that Lugland has no wish to attack other nations and that her sole desire is to be allowed to pursue a peacoful course of social and commercial development. The Dominions share this feeling and are ready to join with us in some general scheme of defence but not of aggression. It is scheme will be formulated. Australia at present defineive to possess a Nasy of her own which would relieve that Imperial Navy from the task of protecting Australia's coasts New Zealand South Africa and recently the Federated Malay States Law with much generosity made presents to the Imperial Navy of fully equipped battleships Canada is now debating the form which her contribution to the general scheme shall take. Munj

Canadians think that the best plan would be to contibute yearly of sum of money sufficient to build three or four battleships, and man them as far as possible with men of Canadian birth, but place them under control of the British Admiralty as part of the British Fleet. Other wish for a purely Canadian Fleet on the Australian model. You will, no doubt, watch with interest the progress of these proposals for creating an Imperial Naval Force for the defence of the Empire.

HOW THE NAVY IS MANAGED

The Navy is controlled in the name of the King by the Board of Admiralty, at the head of which is a Member of the Cabinet (see p. 23) whose official title is First Lord of the Admiralty. He is always a civilian. and sometimes without any practical knowledge of the sea. This may strike you as very odd, but in our country we do not like to entrust too great power to professional soldiers and sailers. The Army and Navy are terrible weapons which ought only to be used in the last necessity, and we prefer, therefore, to place them in the keeping of civilian statesmen. The First Lord is, of course, advised and assisted by naval officers, of whom the Board contains four. The Senior Naval Lord is always an Admiral of wide experience. He is responsible for the general condition of the Floet, and regulates its movements, and guides the First Lord in the appointment of the senior officers. The Second Sea Lord deals entirely with the personnel, and the Third Sea Lord with material. The fourth of the Naval Lords has control of the naval dockyards at Portsmouth, Rosyth, Chatham, Sheerness, Devonport, Gibraltar, Malia, and elsewhere where men-of-war are built or repaired. The Board of

Admiralty also contains a Permanent Scentary, a Civil Lord and a Parliamentary Sceneary. The latter has especially to look after the financial affairs of the Navy and usually presents the Naval Fedemates in Parlies ent At the head of each of the several feets into which the Navy is suldivided is an Admiral, and under him are Vice Identials and Rear Admirals. Lach man-of war is officered by a Cap aim who is responsible for his ship under whom are commanders hentenants mid shipmen engiteers singlens beatswares gunners car panters etc etc. The crew of each ship is made up of earlors sometimes calle Illu pickets and of engin ers and stekers who take care of the machiners. On every ship also there are a number of then belonging to the Loyal Marines These are solliers and sulors too and are very us ful men in led. Their metto is per mare per terrain (by land and sea) and they are equally at home on both. They go to sea hiko sailors and when necessary are landed from the ships to fight on store. Though not belonging exactly to the Army or to the Vary the Royal Marines have become mistly famous for their bravery and general efficiency

The Navy is kept up by voluntary enlistment. No one can be compelled to serve against his will But this was not always the case during the long war with I rance a century ago. I chaps you have read in Captain Marryats stones or elsewhere of the pressing and the foreible methods employed in these days for securing a le-bedied scamen for the havy. Those matters belong to a I rigono system which we trust may never be revived Nowadays men culist for five or twolve years and then for the most pure enter the Boyal Place Reserve from which they can be summoned for service in time of war. The Coastguards whon you have probably seen and

who patrol our shores day and night, are another branch of the Naval Reserves. Another valuable source of supply is the Royal Naval Reserve comprising some 27,000 men drawn from the mercantile marine and the fishing feets. Yet another small reserve is found in the Royal Navy Volunteers who offer for service either on sea or land.

Officers and Men

The officers of the Navy are trained from their boyhood in special schools and training ships. A long and very specialised education is needed to make an efficient' naval officer; hence the necessity of commencing his

career at an early age-about 13.

The total expenditure distributed over the nine years which should carry a naval officer from his entrance as a caded up to the rank of lieutenant is about £1000—a sum which compares more than favourably with the expenses incurred in entering other professions. Moreover, the pensions in the Navy are upon a fairly liberal scale and mush, of course, be taken into account when summing up the many advantages which the career offsars to boys of ability, good character, and strong physiqua.

Applications for admission to the Navy should be addressed to the Assistant Private Secretary to the Pirst Lord of the Admiralty, Whitehall, London, S.W.

The introduction of the continuous service system has been an immense advantage to the "Lower Deek" in improving the quality of its personnel, and affording to the men what it affords to the officers, viz. the profession and devotion of a lifetime. In the old days there was no assumed of a career to the men. To-day every well-behaved man can rely on continuous employment at good rates of pay followed by provision for old age, combined with many

or portunities for using to the rank of Warrant Officer, and in certain cases to the commissioned ranks. There is no other service which offers better opportunities than the Royal Navy to well-conducted intelligent men determined to get on. Pamphlets may be obtained at any post office in the Unit'd Kingdom explaining in clear language how, when, and where to join the Royal Navy

Related to the Royal Navy though not setually of it are the lower-grade appointments on shore in connection with dockyards, storting as Boy Artific is and Dockyard Apprentices Lads entoring for these appointments must be of good health and very good character and between the ages of 11 and 16 It is usual for the Admiralty to offer annually a certain number of nominations for these appointments to the Local Education Authorities throughout the country Selected boys in the secondary and technical schools are recommended by the Councils for these appointments and it would be well for parents and guardians to communicate with the Director of Education for the Borough or County, in order to ascertain the conditions under which these situations are offered, and the of portunities for advancement which they afford to boys with a mechanical bent

THE BOTTISH ARMY

The land forces of the United Kingdom consist of the Regular Army and the Territorial Army both of which are raised by voluntary colletime it. In placing our Army upon a voluntary basis we differ completely from the other great Furepran Powers who either compel all makes to zerve for some portion of their life with the colours, or resert to "conscription," in which inhitary service is determined by drawing lots Of these two methods

Compulsory Service is fairer to everyone, for it is possible under the system of Conscription for a rich man, who has drawn an "unlucky" number, to escape service by paying for a substitute. This is unjust towards the poor man who cannot raise money enough for someone to take his place.

The British Army is very small compared with those of Germany, Russia, and France. As you learned earlierin this chapter we rely principally upon our Navy to protect us from invasion, and we, therefore, keep only a small "Standing Army" of under 200,000 men, enlisted for service either at home or abroad. Our Empire is so widely scattered that what we most need is a highly trained and efficient "striking force" which can be despatched at a moment's notice to any part of the world where it may be required. Whether our Army is large enough for the purpose it has to serve, and whether in the future we may have to resort to compulsory military service are questions which we cannot discuss here. But upon these matters you will hear much if you only readthe daily papers and listen to the addresses of public speakers and politicians. They are not subjects to be lightly treated, and it will be your part as a thoughtfuland responsible citizen to help by your vote and voice to settle these difficult problems affecting the welfare of the State.

The British Army belongs, in a special series, to the people. It exists only by the will of Parliament. This was not always so. In the times of the Stuart Kings the army belonged to the King. It was a royal force rather than a national institution, and was disliked by the people because it was often used to extend the personal power of the monarch. When William of Orange was brought over, and the Stuarts expelled from the kingdom; a special.

clause was inverted in the famous Bill of Pights making it illegal for the Sovereign to maintain a Standing Army in times of peace without the consent of Parliament. Livery year a fall is now brought into Pulliament settling the number of soldiers to be employed, etc., and is passed " under the title of the "Army Discipline and Pe-ulation Act" If for any reason this Act were omitted or forgotten to be passed the Arms would be desolved and the men might retire to their homes. The Navy, on the other hand is a permanent institution although Parlin ment has to vote every year the necessary funds for its upkecp. But no annual Bill has to be brought in for the regulation of the Navy The Bill of Rights does not prohibit the constant keeping up of the Navy whether in peace or war for the Navy as you can see could peyer be used against the people in the same way as the Army

THE ARMY COUNCIL.

Although the King is still nominally the head of the Array, he possesses in reality a very limited authority, and the actual administration and control is vested in the hands of the Army Conneil who whilst doing everything in the King's name, are directly under the authority of the Calinut which acts through the Secretary of State for War. Thus again you observe that the Forces of the Crown are under civilian control. The Army Conneil consists of the Secretary of State for War (who acts a President), four Military Members, and two Civil Members. It therefore follows the pattern of the Beard of Admiralty

The military members supervise the several Lranches into which the business of the War Office is divided. The first unitary member is called the Chief of the Imperial General Staff. He has the general direction

and control of the Army, and deals with preparation and organisation for war, the training of soldiers, the manceuvres, etc., etc. The Adjutant-General is the second military member of the Army Council. He is concerned with the raising and organisation of the military forces at home and abroad discipline medical, and sanitary matters, and a mass of other details too numerous to Third comes the Quartermaster-General who mention. has the oversight of the supply of food, clothing, and horses to the army, the settling of the amount of stores that are to be kept in reserve, etc. The fourth memberis the Master-General of the Ordnance, whose duty it is to see to the guns and ammunition, and the maintenance of fortifications, barracks, ranges, etc., etc. The two civil members above mentioned are (1) the Parliamentary Under-Secretary of State for War, and (2) the Finance Member of the Council. Their official titles sufficiently disclose the nature of their duties. Though not technically a member of the Council, the Permanent Under-Secretary to the War Office who acts as Secretary to the Army Council, takes, like most secretaries, an active part in its work.

The actual command of the Army rests with the generals whom the Council appoint, and the Inspector-General of the Forces reports to the Council upon the

condition and efficiency of every department,

About a third part of the British Army is regularly stationed in India. To this must be added the Native Indian Army, which is about double the size of the British force in that country. The cost of this army is borne by India itself, but expeditions beyond the Indian frontier are paid for by the home government unless Parliament decides otherwise.

The British Army was formerly organised in three

lines (1) the B gular Army with its Reserve, (2) the Militia, and (3) the Auxiliary Forces (1 commany and Volunteers). It is now organised in two lines only, (1) the Regular Army with its Reserve and Special Reserve (the latter replacing the old Militia), and (2) the Turntorial Force or citizen army, constituted out of the old Yeomany and Volunteers.

Supplementary to the Army, but without definite liability for service unless otherwise undertaken, are the Royal Military College and Royal Military Academy, and other military schools the Othersa Training Corps, the National Reserve, and the officially recognised Calet Units. The terms of service for the regular forces and Special Lescrice are laid down in the Permiting Regulations and the conditions of enlistment of the territorial force are contained in the Regulations for the Territorial Force. All these regulations are published by H.M. Stationery, Office, and may be purchased very readily through any bookseller at the cost of a few pence.

THE RESULTERS

The Regular Army consists of cavalry, infantry, artillery, and engineers besides the Army Service Corps, which looks after matters of transport and commentant Their looks after matters of transport and end as the Army Ordnance Department, the Royal Army Medical Corps, the Army Vetermary Service, etc.

A soldier enlists for 12 years, part of which is spent with the colours, and part in the lleserre. During this latter period the men rejented by the but are little to be called out at any time when their services are required. It is possible for a man to rise in the Army from the runks, and to become a commissioned officer.

The standard of living, however, set by the officers in certain regiments renders it difficult for a man without private means, under the rank of a major, to make ends meet on his pay. There are, however, many opportunities of serving abroad where the remuneration being on a higher scale, and expenses considerably less, an officer can exist quite comfortably on his pay from the first.

The degrees of rank of commissioned officers in the army are the following:-

Field Marshals,
Generals,
Licottenant-Generals,
Major-Generals,
Brigadior-Generals,
Colonels,
Lientenant-Colonels,
Majors,
Captains,
Lieutenants,
Second-Lientenants,
Often styled subalterns.

The Territorials

The object of the Territorial Army (or "Terriers," as they have been nicknamed) is to provide a force for home defence with no obligation to serve abroad. The administration of the Territorial Force is in the hands of the County Associations at all times other than when called up for annual training in camp, when embodied, or when on actual military service. The Territorials came into existence in 1908, and have supplanted the old Volunteers, whose organisation was not all that could be desired. The Volunteers, must, however be remembered with affection and respect, for they often received but scanty

encouragement from the authorities, and the enthusiam they showed in the cause of home defence, and in rendering themselves efficient soldiers has alone made the more comprehensive territorial scheme possible. The motto of . the Voluntiers was 'Defence not Defiance" and a very good motto too It would be well for each and all of you to understand that these citizen soldiers whether called by the old name of Volunteers or by the new name of Territorials, constitute the sole barrier between the people of this country and some system of compulsory military service or conscription, such as is employed in other lands. The thanks of the community are therefore due to those patriotic men who devote their leisure to equip ping themselves for the defence of the homeland With our small standing army it is of paramount advantage to have a body of men voluntarily trained in military duties capable of garrisoning the country in case the regular forces were entaged elsewhere in fighting the enemies of the Crown The Regular Army is not large enough to attend to home defines as well as to the protection of our possessions abroad. Voluntary enlistment in the regular army cannot furnish a sufficient supply for both purposes, and therefore, as said above unless a citizen army of volunteers for lome defence is forthcoming it is fairly certain that this country also would have to introduce some form of compulsery service. Whether that would be good or lad for the country is one of the subjects you will be asked to discuss at the end of this thapter

The men who volunteer for the Territorial Army must attend drills during their lessure hours for a pariot of at least four years, and are required once a year to undergo 8 to 14 days training in camp. Most employers are willing to liberate their men for this period without deduction of wages; and indeed it would be deemed a disservice on their part to the State to wishfold par mission to undergo this short annual training, or to make it an excuse for deducting a proportionate amount of wag or salary. It is hoped eventually to raise a Tenitoria Army 300,000 strong possessing its own cavalry, artillery engineers, and other corps and departments.

The Officers' Training Corps, which is a branch of the territorial army is recruited mainly from the Publi Sohools and the Universities. The object is to train it members so as to enable them eventually to become Special Reserve or Territorial Officers. There are man inducements offered now in the way of attractive allow ances to young men who qualify themselves as officer in the Special Reserve, information upon which mapprinaps, most easily be had by enquiry among friend already in the Territorial Force. Every Officer under 3 in the Special Reserve receives a retaining fee of £2: a year, which more than covers expenses during his shor annual training, as the authorities sternly discourage an unnecessary expenditure over messes, etc.

Boy Scours

A recent movement inaugurated by General Sir R.S.S. Beden-Powell for the training of boys in the principles of scouting, and incidentally in drilling exercises and whole some forms of outdoor recreation, has succeeded beyond ell expectation. Indeed the movement has spread to foreign lands. A somewhat similar organisation is being also attempted for girls. Objection has been mixed by some people to the Boy Scouts, on the ground that their tenhing savours too much of militarism; but those win have watched the boy scouts at work realise that the

souting games provide a healthy outlet for the natural love of adventure characteristic of boyhood, whilst the drilling exercises are devised to strengthen and develop the body and have in them nothing of a distinctive military character. A fine effort is made at the same time by the scout masters' and other leaders of the movement to train the boys in habits of respect to elders, kundness to their fellows, cleinliness of person and of language, and above all to truthfulness sincerity and honourable dealing. This moral training is of the highest value, and many a lad who might have drifted into the ranks of the hooligans owes a debt of grutifude to the rien who spend freely of the r time and money in advancing the cause of the boy so ut General Baden-Powell, in the treface to his book Scouting for Boys, thus describes the work -

"By the term scouting is recent the work and attributes of backwood-men explorers and frontersmen. In groung the elements of these to boys we supply a system of games, and practices which meets their discresand instincts and is at the same time educative.

"From the boys point of view scouting puts them into fraternity gangs, which is their natural organisation, whether for games, inischief, or loading, it gives them a smart dress and equipment, it appeals to their imagnation and remance, and it engages them in an active, open air life.

"The method of instruction in 'accounting is that of or thing in the boy the desire to learn for himself, and not by drilling knowledge into him

"From the parents' point of view it gives physical health and development, it taches energy, resourcefulness, and handicrafts, it puts into the lad discipline, pluck, chivalry, and patnotism, in a word, it develops 'character,' which is more essential than anything to a lad for making his way in life, and which is yet practically untaught in the schools.

"From the national point of view our aim is solely to make the rising generation into good citizens. We avoid military training for reasons given in the book."

THE NATIONAL PLACE

Wherever a British ship sails the sea, whether a stately man-of-war or a humble cargo "tramp"; whereever a British regiment pitches its camp, whether at . Aldershot or in the remotest outpost of the Empire: wherever, in fact, British subjects have gained a foothold, there flies the Union Jack-the National Flag. Our hearts warm to it when we meet it in distant lands floating majestically at the peak of some lofty flagstaff. For it speaks to us of home, and we know that we are among friends, and that the language of the homeland is there spoken! The flag is a bond between all good citizens of the Empire. It denotes kinship and a community of interests, it betokens an unquestioned allegiance and devotion to King and Country. We, therefore, respect the flag, and will not suffer it to be treated with indignity. Soldiers and sailors are taught to salute the flag, and this is no empty ceremony, but is full of meaning.

The history of the Union Jack is interesting. In its present form it dates from the year 1801, and signifies the Union of England, Sociand, and Ireland into one United Kingdom: If you dissect the flag youll see that it consists of three super-imposed crosses. First, there is the large red cross in the middle which is shaped thus 4' and which has a white border round it. It is the Cross

of St George, and is emblematic of Fagland. Then you will see that there is a wintecross shaped like this X on a bine ground. That is the Cross of St. Andrew, and was for along time the sign of Scotland. And lastly you will see that there is another cross of the same shape as the last, only red upon a white ground. This is the Cross of St. Patrick, the patron saint of Ireland.

THE FIRES OF WAR

Happily to-day in Ingland we know little of the liotrors of war and of the invery and suffering which are its risult. No war can over be fought without causing pain sorrow death and run to many, or without leaving belind it much rancour and iff blood. If you are ever tempted to think that war is a glorious thing or that fighting can over be snything but horible and cruel try and learn from the accounts of these who have seen real warfare what its results always are and must be

In dealing with the subject of War it is impossible not to recognise that there are some wars which are justifiable and others that are not. Wars such as those waged by Napoleon for the sake of glory or aggrandisement are an unmitigated curse to humanity. On the other hand there are cases in which a p-ople rightly struggling to be free have had no other course open to their than to throw off the yoke of the oppressor by a sanguinary war. Such wars are justified by posterity and the victorious generals are bailed as liberators of their country. Most of your great civil and religious liberties have been wen by the sword, and at the price of blood. As the nations grow oldst and waser they are happily showing signs of turning away from the horrors of bloodshed and looking to their tration as a better means of settling disputes. Illut the

reign of peace is not yet established. Matters involving vitel interests or national honour are as yet excluded, from the terms of our arbitration treaties. Let your hopes therefore be, that peaceful seddement of international difficulties may increasingly prevail. But whilst cherishing this forvent aspiration, do not forgot the great lesson which history teaches, viz. that war from time to time appears to have been an instrument in the hands of the Almighty for chatsising those nations that have grown rich, selfish, idle, corrupt, and neglectful of their duty towards God and their neighbour.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

1. Discuss the value of Australia's scheme of Naval Defence. How far would their fleet be of any use if the British Fleet were first annihilated?

2. From Whitaker's Almanack ascertain the names of the various fleets into which the Navy is divided. How many men are there in the Navy excluding Reserves?

3. What is the approximate cost of (1) a "Droadnought";
(2) a Submarine; and what are the wages and allowances of a bluejacket?

4. What amount of money was voted last year by Parliament for (1) the Navy; (2) the Army?

5. Discover from Whitaker's Almanack, or other Annual, the names of the present members of the Board of Admiralty, and of the Army Council.

6. Can you suggest any basis upon which Germany and England could agree to a limitation of naval armaments?

7. Discuss the question of compulsory military service.

Is there compulsory military service in any part of our
Empire: If so, where, and how far is it successful?

and Nelson, and some splendid record associated with Wellington, Havelock, Riberts, and the loss of the "Birkenh all"

9 What is the VO. and for what is it awarded! What

did Napoleon mean when he said that in everyope of his soldiero' knapsacks fay a marshile baton f

10 Are you a boy scout or a member of the OTC ? If

not, why not?

Il Discuss the proposition that the best guarantee of peace is to be prerised for war 12 Define Patriotism Is it the duty of a patriot to say,

"My country right or wron, "!

13 What is Martial Law? When is it invoked in civil life!

CHAPTER XII

SCHOOLS AND SCHOLARS

EARLY EDUCATIONAL EFFORTS

· A CENTURY ago the majority of your countrymen could neither read nor write, and the poorer members of the community had little or no opportunity of acquiring in their youth even the barest elements of education Whilst some other countries (Germany in particular) were steadily developing their educational systems we stood still, doing little or nothing for the education of the masses. In earlier times the monasteries and religious houses all looked upon it as part of their duty to teach the rudiments of learning to those who were anxious to be taught. At their dissolution the schools attached to them were also broken up, and were rarely re-established It was the great desire of a few noble minds of the time that the revenues derived from the spoil of the monastic houses should be used in part for the continuation of the work of the schools. But this was not done, and nearly all the schools perished. Very few, indeed, of our educational institutions date from before the Reformation. After the Reformation, however, we find a number of Grammar Schools set up in various parts of the country and endowed by pious founders. Many were doubtless "conscience-money" foundations, representing a partial

restitution of the spoils of the ableys and other prereformation institutions. But the Grammar Schools never contempleted what we now call clementary education, and the very poor rurely benefited from these foundations. This no doubt was partly due to the difficulty with which the poor could dispense with the scanty earnings of their children, who were put to work long before they had had time to acquire even a very small measure of education. This difficulty is felt even to-day, and the attempts made to surmount it will be dealt with in the next charter.

As industries mult 11 el the population of our country grew reputh but the 8 ho is did in the expose with the increase and thus a truly deplorate state of things arose. It is safe to say that about 1800 the education of our masses was about at the lowest elb it ever reached in this or any other crulived excustry. Crime—the product of ignorance as well as of injustace—flourished, and the prisons were cheked with turnstes. The hearts of many cornect and truly patricts men were touched by the initial agreeance of the phylo. Thro at least of these men must be named—Lobert Raikes Joseph Lancaster, and Dr. Andrew Bell.

Pobert Raikes a printer of Gloucester, opened in 1780 the first Sunday School in which in addition to religious instruction reading spelling and writing were taught. This short hour of weekly education was all that was received by many of those who joined in the subscription to creet in 1880—just a century later—the incomment you now see standing on the Victoria Finlankment dedicated to the memory of the founder of Sunday Schools.

"BRITISH" AND "NATIONAL" SCHOOLS

To the efforts of Joseph Lancaster the foundation of the British and Foreign School Society in 1808 is due: In many towns and villages, humble places of instruction known generally as "British Schools" were erected by this excellent and philanthropic organisation. Threeyears later the activity and enthusiasm of Dr. Bell led to the foundation of the "National Society for the Education of the Poor in the principles of the Church of England." Numbers of "National Schools" were established by this Society, and thousands of people still living owe what little instruction they ever received to the British or to the National Schools. These two famous Societies are still in flourishing existence, but their. activities are now directed in the one case to the management of certain Training Colleges for Teachers of which we shall speak later, and in the case of the National Society to the protecting and aiding of Church of England Schools and Training Colleges. Following the example of these two Societies, the Roman Catholics and Wesleyans established similar Societies to look after the interests of their own schools.

For long years these philanthropic bodies received no recognition from the State, and relied solely for the support upon voluntary subscriptions (bence the terri "Voluntary Schools") and upon the small fees—generally twopence per week—paid by the scholars. There was no compulsory attendance in earlier days, consequently many sollish or neglectful parents never even attempte to secure for their children the slender advantages which these schools offered.

In 1833 the Government for the first time voted who

many people then thought a very large sum, viz £20,000, for the building of more schools, and from that year forward the grants have steadily increased, until to-day they are counted in millions of pounds per annum. To administer the grants a Comunities of the Privy Council (see p. 54) was established in the year 1839, and until 1900, when the present Board of Education was set up, all matters apportaining to the expenditure of the grants and management of the public elementary schools were done with the sanction and in the name of the 'Lords of the Committee of Council on Education'. This combrons system with its laboured homeocclature is now sucptumes.

It would be a long and intricate history to recount from 1833 onwards the difficulties that had to be overcome before the people of this country secured a thoroughly efficient public educational system. A few of the early efforts on his however to be mentioned

RAGGED SCHOOLS

In 1844 the Ragged School Union was established, and until the passing of the Education Act of 1870 continued its voluntary educational work. The "Tather Island Schools' was John Pounds a shoemaker, of Portsmouth, who in the early years of the 19th century dovoted himself to the improvement of the outcast children in his neglibourhood. Though its educational work is now in other hands, the Hagged School Union still exists, and does excellent charitable work in proving clothes for deserving necessitous children, etc. As an outcome of this movement, and largely through the efforts of Missi Mary Carpenter, Lord Shaftesbury, and others, "Industrial" and "Reformatory" Schools (of which we shall

have more to say later) were erected to prevent crime, and reform child criminals.

Our "Industrial" schools are the direct descendants of, and some of them now actually occupy the premises or the sites of the original Ragged Schools. Unlike the Reformatories, Industrial Schools have, not any closs association with prisons, and it will clear up your ideas on this important subject if you realise that the function of the Industrial School is to reclaim youngsters who are beginning the downward path towards criminal life, whilst the Reformatories deal with young delinquents who have been actually guilty of some oriminal offence. We shall learn more of these excellent institutions in the chapters on The State and the Child.

BEFORE 1870

Much of the elementary "education" in the earlier days of the last century was furnished by private

enterprise.

You would hardly credit the deplorable condition of the so-called "private schools" in existence before 1870. Anybody was thought good enough to teach children. One of the Assistant Commissioners appointed to inquire into the whole subject said—"None are too old, too poor, too ignorant, too feeble, too unqualified in every way to regard themselves, and to be regarded by others as unfit for school keeping." Domestic servants, barundis, small sonykeepers, bedridden consumptives, oripples, discharged soldiers, people in receipt of outdoor relief, men. and women of seventy to eighty years of gee, people who spelled badly, who could hardly read, and who could not cipher at all, were found "keeping school" in all manner of dismal, dark, and ill-ventilated, places, kitchens,

bedrooms, outhouses, etc. It was not only in the villages, but in the great towns and eithes that such a reaudalous state of things as above out lined was permitted to exist The village "Dame Schools," much as they have been radicaled for their inefficiency, were, as a matter of fact, among the best of their kind, for the old woman who taught her little flock was generally selected, and assisted by the parson or squire on the ground that she was a little better instructed than her neighbours. Whereas in former years it was just a mere chance whether a decent school happened to be within access, it is now enacted by Parliament that an efficient public elementary school shall be brought within reach (not over 3 miles distant) of every child in the kingdom, and that every boy and girl between the a₀es of 5 and 14 shall have a right to a free place in that school.

1870-1902

You, who now enjoy educational advantages of which people in those days scarcely dreamed, would be surprised and sheeked if you were to read of the immense opposition with which the suggestion of compulsory education was greeted, when Mr William Edward Forster—whose status you will find on the Victoria Embankment in London—introduced his famous Frientino Bill into the House of Commons in February, 1870. That Bill which became an Act I in the autumn of 1870 set up "School Roards," elective bodies charged with the provision and oversight of public elementary schools (hence the term "Board Schools") in distincts where the voluntary school accommolation was usufficient for the needs of the neighbourhood. In 1870 compulsion was begalised

and School Attendance Officers were appointed to call upon, and arge all parents to send their children to school. Compulsion was applied gradually. Each district was at first allowed to use its own discretion, and to pass such bye-laws as it thought fit to ensure the attendance of the children. As you might expect some places were not as strict as others, and in 1880, an Act¹ made it compulsory upon all local education authorities to frame bye-laws and to enforce them. At first education was not given free of charge, nor was it until 1891 that every child, could claim a free place in the Elementary Schools.

For many years the Board Schools and Voluntary Schools existed side by side, and children could be sent either to the one or to the other; but as the Board Schools had the rates behind then as well as government grants and pupils' fees, they were able to make themselves highly efficient and attractive, whilst the poorer voluntary schools (which were always attached to some religious body such as the Church of England, or the Wesleyans, or Roman Catholics) had no money out of the rates, and depended solely for their support upon the government grants supplemented by voluntary subscriptions, together with the small fees charged to the scholars. It is easy to understand, therefore, how little by little the Voluntary Schools found themselves under a heavy strain. Subscriptions fell away, and they languished simply for lack of money. For many people thought that, being forced to pay rates for the support of the Board Schools, they ought not to be expected to subscribe also to the Voluntary Schools.

At length in December, 1902, an Act was passed which placed the Voluntary Schools also "upon the

rates" This famous Act I made many other alterations in the then existing practice. It swept away the old School Boards, and transferred the control of their Schools to the Local Councils The old "Pourd Schools" are therefore now called "Council Schools," and since they have been provided out of public money they are often termed "provided" schools. The Voluntary Schools being no longer entirely supported by subscriptions have also lost their old title and are called "non provided" schools since they were for the most part originally built, and maintained out of money not provided by the State Other reforms also were effected under the Act of 1902 On the principle that there shall be "no taxation without representation ' the Local Councils have obtained a certum degree of representation upon the Boards of Managers of the "non provided" or voluntary schools, but not complete control. The councils, for instance, have no voice in the nature of the religious instruction imparted in the "non provided" schools, nor do they appoint the teaching staff

At present, then, you will have gathered that the cost of elementary education is defraved partly by government grants, and partly by rates levied by the local authority—in Boroughs by the Town Councils and class there by the Urban District Councils, or County Councils Of the powers of these bodies over elementary education you are already familiar by what you have read in Chapters VI and VII.

INSPECTORS AND THE CODE

Over the many thousands of public elementary schools, the Reant of Education exercises control and oversightoversight by means of the Inspectors who are the "eyes and ears of the Board," and control by refusing to pay the grants when the Iuspectors report that the teaching or equipment or buildings are unastifactory. Every year the Board issues a book of regulations called the Code for the guidance of teachers, managers, and inspectors clike. In such manner the efficiency of our educational system is ensured.

SCHOOL AGE; HALF-TIMERS

Before 1876, when compulsory education first became general, a child of 8 years might go to work as a "halftimer." In 1880 the age limit was raised to 10. Public opinion has slowly come round to the view that it is too soon to allow a child to begin earning a living at the age of 10, and the age-limit has been gradually raised. As matters stand to-day, no child may be sent to work before the age of 12,1 and every parent must send his children to school from the age of 5 to 14 unless he can secure exemption on certain grounds. Thus it is possible for children under 14, but over 12,1 who have passed a certain standard of attainment, or who have made a certain specified number of attendances, to go to work as "half-timers." They may get total exemption under 14 if the Education Committee think that the proposed employment will be "beneficial" to the child. Thus it happens that in many textile and rural areas there are few children over 13 in the schools. The majority of Local Education Authorities regard the "half-time" system as opposed to the best interests of the child. Boys and girls who attend for only half the day cannot make much progress in their studies. Nor is the system good for the discipline and general tone of the school for reasons you can easily think out for yourselves.

1 11 if employed in Agriculture, by 62 & 63 Vict. c. 13.

A good and wase parent will strain every nerve to allow his children to stay as long as possible at school Now that there are "Ex Standard VII Classes," "Central Schools," and "Municipal Secondary Schools" which carry education to a much higher grade, and now also that the Local Education Authorities offer Scholarships and Maintenance Allowances (and valuable Bursaries for those who wish to enter the teaching profession) whereby the intelligent and industrious can continue their education practically free of cost it would indeed be a pity to deprive a bright and promising child of these great advantages by sending, bun forth into the battle of life carlier than is absolutely necessary. Some young folka are, however, obliged by poverty to leave school at the earliest moment, and with a very impurfect education For such as these most Authorities provide excellent Leming Schools.

EVENING SCHOOLS

As a result of the widespread feeling that 14 is too young an age for a child to cease its education, in all our leading towns and cities the Local Education Authorities have established Evening Schools, where young men and women can continue their studies in their spare hours. It no doubt requires straight of will and of purpose to go to school again after a hird day's work, but the boy or girl who is determined to advance in the will make the effort, and hundreds of people own their positions to the knowledge and skill acquired in Lyening Schools and kindred sustitutions. A youth of 14 who has no attitude on," too often drifts into mischief in the evenings.

I rom such are drawn the "hooligans ' of the streets,

and it is, therefore, believed by all social reformers, and by very many other people, that the time has come to compel every one to continue his education for a year or two after leaving school, by attending either day or evening continuation classes. We should not be the first country to adopt legislation of this kind.

Evening Schools now exist of every type and grade, from simple classes where the defects of clementary education may be remedied, up to the Technical Schools in which is provided instruction of the highest order. A boy in a large town may thus pass from the Evening School in his old day school, to a branch Technical School, or to a Commercial Evening School, and thence to the great Technical Colleges and Schools of Commerce. There is no lack of opportunity—in the towns at least—for an industrious and ambitious youth to improve his knowledge and his efficiency, and his position in life, through the agency of these Evening Schools. In Loudon the "Polytechnics" are doing magnificent work of this kind for those who desire to extend their technical, scientific, or literary knowledge.

TRACHERS AND TRAINING COLLEGES

In those far away days when the British and Foreign, and National Societies began their beneficient work, there were few or no competent teachers to be obtained; and both Lancaster and Bell adopted what is called the "monitorial system," that is, the older children were made "monitors" or instructors of those still younger.

This, as you may be sure, was not a very efficient plan, but it was the best that could be devised at the time. The paid apprentice or "pupil-teacher" system was next introduced in 1846, and held the field for a long time. But as the demand grow for better methods of teaching the time arrived when the need of institutions for professional training begin to be felt. There are now in existence many splandid Training Colleges in which young men and women receive their ecidemic and professional training before proceeding to their work as teachers in the public elementary schools. The Training Colleges are a sually in close connection with either the National, or British or Loronga Secretaes of which you have already heard (see [147]) or are maintained by education authorities or again are justs of a University Those coming under the two latter heads are undenominational in character.

Of the excellent opportunities open to young people of both earse who desure to enter the sel clastic profession we shall have something to siy in the next chapter when speaking of the Educational Ladder. In a community of intelligent people no one should be more highly valued and honoured than the teacher for it is he who in a greater degree than any offer the shapes the character of the citizens of the future. Good citizenship should begin in the school, and show itself in obschience to and respect for the teacher, and in a willing submission to all rules and regulations. The latter are just as necessary for the corporate life of the school as the laws are necessary to the corporate life of the indicen

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND PERSON

I Is there a "British" or a "Nati nai" or a Cathelic School anywhere in your neighbourhood? Do people still speak of it as a Noluntury "Chool, or do they term it a "non-provided" School? How many Managers I as it and what proportion are appended by the Lecal Council?

156 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

- Where is the nearest Council School? 'Is it still ever called a "Board" School?
- What is the amount of the Education Rate in your Borough or District?
 What is meant by the "Conscience Clause"? (See
- 4. What is meant by the "Conscience Clause"? (See Section 7 of the Act of 1870, or Section 4 of the Act of 1902.)
- Discuss the question of the responsibility (1) of the Parent; (2) of the School, for the religious instruction of the shild.
- Make a list of all the Educational Institutions in your town and the objects aimed at by each.

CHAPTER XIII

SCHOOLS AND SCHOLARS (Continued)

LADOWED SCHOOLS

THERE have always been in our country charitably disposed people who have given or bequeathed money for the foundation of schools or scholarships but such charitable action has been individud and local in its character. We find for instance that the town of Bedford has been particularly fortunate in this respect having received large endowments from a wealthy citizen Harpur (or Harner), who had in the time of Elizabeth By industry and talent William Harpur rose to be Lord Mayor of London, and after attaining wealth and fame he granted a piece of hand with school buildings upon it to the town of his birth. Morcover for the support of the school, and for other charitable objects he left thirteen acres of mendow land in the parish of St. Andrews, Holborn, London This land is now covered with buildings, and is immensely valuable, and yields a rental of many thousands per annum. The funds are administered by Trustees, who have been able-so great is the incometo provide Bedford with many institutions of every educational grade, for children of both sexes belonging to all classes of society I'ven 'Fxhibitions' to the Universities are provided out of the "Harpur Trust"

Though Bedford has been specially favoured in

educational endowments, other towns have also to a less extent been furnished with schools and colleges by Founders who desired to benefit and be remembered by posterity. Consequently we find the Endowed Schools built in most unlikely places, in small towns and villages. important perhaps, in the eyes of the founders, but remote from the great centres of population. The new industrial cities that have sprung up during the last century frequently lacked an endowed school, and until the State of late years took in hand the supply of secondary as well as elementary education, these towns had to get on as best they could with "private schools": (i.e. schools conducted by private persons for their own profit), or with such other institutions as the public spirit of the townsfolk succeeded in establishing. In Liverpool, for example, where there was no ancient . foundation such as Bedford enjoyed, we find a band of philanthropic citizens establishing schools. In 1819 they founded the Royal Institution, in 1825 the Liverpool Institute, and in 1840 the Liverpool College-all of which are existing to-day and performing valuable educational work.

What you must understand, therefore, is that for many generations the Endowed Schools, upon which the country. chiefly relied for the higher education of its boys (Girls' Schools upon a public basis are of very recent growth). were scattered irregularly here and there, sometimes in tiny country villages (e.g. Sedbergh and Giggleswick), just where the original benefactors had placed them. In places where no Endowed Schools existed the inhabitants . depended upon private effort. Rich people, of course, could afford tutors and governesses for their children, or . could send them to the big boarding schools like Eton, Harrow, Rugby, etc., but the middle and poorer classes

had the greatest difficulty in securing for their boys and girls any sort of higher education, unless they lived in the immediate vicinity of an Fudowed School Even then many parents found the Grammar Schools, as most of the endowed schools were termed, very unsuitable. They had become hopelessly out of date. Many of them were established in the days when Latin and Greek were the only subjects of study, and some were so restricted by the terms of the foundation as to be unable to teach anything beyond these languages Science, mathematics, modern languages drawing music manual instruction. etc., rarely entered into their curricula. The school buildings also were often antiquated in design and out of harmony with modern pleas Nevertheless, with all their limitations, the ancient Grammar Schools did a great work for English education, and numbers of our most famous citizens have been reared within their time honoured walls and nurtured on their classical scholatchip

Although the present generation has found it necessary to alter some details in their original constitution, the spirit of the great Revival of Larning, of Lirismus, of Colet, founder of St. Pauls, first of the post-Reformation schools, of Litys, its first High-master, has surrived in them to this day. In the new shipe which modern legislation has given to them, the old training Schools of the 16th and 17th centuries, drawing their inspiration from the classical models of 1 ton, Winchester, and per haps, above all others, from Colet's foundation, are among the most potent factors in modern education.

As far back as 1818 Parliament had set up a body known as the Charity Commissioners, whose dath it was to inquire into the administration of educational and other charities. In 1864 a Schools Inquiry Commission was appointed to report upon the measures required for the improvement of Secondary Education, and as a result of their recommendations a body of Commissioners was appointed under the Endowed Schools Act, 1869; with full powers to deal with endowed schools in England and Wales, and to frame "Schomes" for their reconstitution and management. The Endowed Schools Commissioners did a great work during their existence, and restored vitality to hundreds of these antiquated and 'decaying institutions. In 1874 their work was taken over, and has been continued by the Charity Commissioners. Boards of Governors have been created to manage the schools, limiting restrictions have been removed, scholarships and free places awarded, and many other valuable reforms effected.

HIGHER GRADE AND OTHER SCHOOLS

The endowed schools were quite insufficient for the many children who wanted and deserved to have their education continued beyond the elementary school. The Grammar Schools were few and comparatively expensive, and many people could ill afford the fees. Another type of school next came into existence. In certain "go-ahead" towns, especially in the North of England, the School Boards, anxious to secure the benefits of higher education for working class children whose parents could not afford high fees, built and equipped "Higher Grade Schools," and by the aid of the grants obtained from the Science and Art Department, together with small fees (about 9d. per week), provided a sort of higher education in which Science and Art subjects predominated. The School Boards did their best, and must not be blamed for sticking closely to "grant-earning" subjects, as the existence of the schools depended on the money so curved. Most of the old higher-gride schools have row been merged into Higher Elementary Schools Central Schools or Municipal Secondary Schools, in which the course of study is much better bilanced on his being much better bilanced on his way languages and literature are adequately represented.

By the funous Act I 1902, of which you have already heard, the County and other Coun ils are permitted to aid Secondary Educati n and the Municipal Sciendlary Schools referred to above are one of the results of this Act. Large numbers of free the es are reserved in the grant-saided secondary schools for scholars proceeding from the elementary schools and even maintenance allowances are made in the case of the power children. It is now—in the towns at least—quite easy for bright boys or guls to of tan up to the ago of to or 17 without cost to their parents an elucation such as will thoroughly equip them for the lattle for the truletest did from to olumb still further up the educational lable, and even enter the Universities with futle or no cost to their parents.

THE UNIVERSITIES.

A century ago there were only two universities— Oxford and Cambridge—in the whole of Ingland and Wales, and the a two were only open to members of the Church of England. To-day Lagland possesses ten innersities and Wales one, all of them open to students of good charactar irrespective of their religious opinions. You will see from the following datas how rapid has been the growth in the number of Universities especially since the days when education was made compulsory. In 1852 the University of Durham received its charter and in 1836 'the University of London (reconstituted in 1898). For many years there was no further creation; then they came with a rush. We now have the Universities of Wales, Birmingham, Manchester, Liverpool; Leeds, Sheffield, and Bristol. Other cities are also anxious to possess universities of their own, and you may probably live to see several more created in Great Britain.

University education is not free to everybody either in this or in any other country; and it would cost a great deal of money and increase taxation if we were to allow everyone who wanted to go to the University free of cost." Sometimes you will hear it said that education should be "free from the bottom of the ladder to the top." That is a subject you will be asked to discuss in one of the questions appended to this chapter. It is certainly not right, however, that university education should be so costly that none but the rich can afford it; and in the newer Universities you will find—thanks to grants of public money that the fees are remarkably low and within the reach of nearly everyone. The two oldest Universities are still quite beyond the means of poor ; people, nevertheless, the scholarships offered by the various colleges are so many and so valuable, that brilliant pupils of slender means will always be able to enter Oxford and Cambridge at small expense to their parents.

We have said nothing as yet about the Scottish and Irish Universities. This you will note is a book upon English citizenship, and, therefore, you will have to consult on certain points the editions which apply particularly to Scotland and Ireland. This much, however, you ought to know, that Scotland is justly proud of her four ancient Universities—Edinburgh, Glasgow, Aberdeen, and Sk. Andrews—which are, and always have been, open to the poor as well as to the rich, irrespective of race or creed.

Ireland, alast—once the land of learning—has no such happy record, having been torn asunder for generations by political and religious dissensions. She is not possessed of three Universities—Dublin University, Queen's University, Belfast, and the Royal University of Ireland.

Trenvie at I ducation

Probably you have heard of the great war between the French and Germans in 1870 1 and of the building up of the German Empiro under Kaiser Willelm I and his adviser Prince Bismarik and y u may wender what this has to do with Technical Schools You will soon see At the time of that war Ingland enjoyed such unquestioned commercial and industrial pre-emmence, that many people were inclined to laugh at the idea of any other nation ever being able to challenge our position So secure did our manufacturers feel in their supremacy, that they neglected to keep their machinery, their methods of manufacture, and their system of trading "up-to date' They looked too often men scientific men as more faddists, quite unable to point out to a business man anything that was worth knowing or likely to improve established methods of minufacture. Being themselves for the most part ignorant of chemistry and physical science our statesmen and leaders of commerce did not realise how largely Science was destined in the future to revolutionise Industry In 1870 when we were just beginning to educate our masses, Germany had for at least two generations been quietly at work upon the general education and scientific training of her young people After the great war with France when Germany became a united nation-proviously she had been a

collection of disunited states-she began in real earnest to compete for a share of the trade of the world, with the result that in the "eighties" of the last century Great Britain awoke to the fact that Germany was becoming a serious rival in fields of industry which the British manufacturer thought were peculiarly his own. At once a cry went up in our land for more "technical education." Up to this time England had been singularly backward in making provision for Industrial Teaching, or Technical Education, as it is often called. Several efforts had been made in that direction, notably by Dr. George Birkbeck, the Yorkshire physician, and pioneer of "Mechanics' Institutes." The Institute which he founded in Loudon in 1824, which still bears his name, and with which for so long he was associated, was the prototype of scores of others which were afterwards established in all parts of the country. For many years the Mechanics' Institutes had a great popularity, but as they received no aid from the State, and as the industrial teaching they provided was insufficient and often faulty, they degenerated for the most part into cheap reading and lecture clubs, where an afternoon or evening might be spent in a pleasant manner. Some of them, such as the Institutes of Manchester, Huddersfield, and Leeds, maintained their original intention long enough to be converted, in recentyears, into Technical Schools. "The utmost," says Sir Philip Magnus, "that can be said for the Mechanics" Institutions is that they afforded during many years of educational obscurity, a glimmer of light which enabled a few of the more gifted of the working classes to grope after the knowledge they required."

Industrial Teaching in this country received a stronger impulse as the result of the Great Exhibition held in London in 1851. This event has been described as "the etarting point in the modern history of Luglish manufactures and arts." The name of Prince Albert hasland of the late Queen Victoria will always be remembered in con nection with this famous Exhibition and with the beneficial influence it exerted upon industrial progress. It afforded for the first time in history on opportunity of comparing British made goods with those of other nations comparison-not always in favour of Great Britain-pro foundly affected the industrial education of our country The profits of the Fulnbutton amounting to nearly \$200,000. were supplemented by a Larhamentary Grant and the sum was sunk in the jurchase of the land upon which now stand all those buildings, the I yel College of Science the Central Technical College and the noble Museums, which have made the name of South Kensington everywhere funous The Department of Science and Art was established in 1853 and furnished with money by the Government, began in 1850 a system of grants for Science. and Art teaching throughout the country Such then. very briefly was the condition of technical education when, about 1880 the country awoke to its insufficiency Technical Institutes and Technical Schools were built

Technical institutes and recipical Schools were limit in feverish haste and everybody hoped that our industries would now be placed upon as scientific a basis as those of Germany. In 1890, under the Local Taxation Act, considerable sums (originally intended to compensate millions for the loss of their licences and therefore often called "the whisky money") were placed at the disport of the newly created County Councils (see p. 76) with a view to the furthersnee of Technical Education. Education is, however a plant of slow growth, and technical instruction—it was soon foun l—could not be given in a hurry. Competent teachers and the right methods of technological teaching had first to be discovered. More

than that, the pupils needed a better groundwork of general education upon which to build the technical knowledge. Consequently progress was slow, and much of the early effort was wasted. Technical teaching must show the connection between principles and practice, and the technological teacher ought to be a master of both. Practical workshop experience should be followed by a study of the theory—each keeping pace with the other. That is the method now adopted in the laboratories, workshops, and locture rooms of our Technical Colleges and of the Polytechnic Institutes of which we shall shortly speak.

The right principles upon which to proceed have been now learnt; and although industrial teaching is still in the process of evolution, and the various details have yet to be co-ordinated into a complete system, the influence of the day and evening technical schools and classes is already making itself felt. Particularly is this the case in the north of England, where the evening schools of all grades are linked up into a graded system with the Tochnical Colleges and Schools of Commerce at the apex.

As you learnt in a previous chapter, the County and County Borough Councils are now responsible, under the 1902 Education Act, for the higher and technical education, in their respective areas, and for these purposes they are empowered to levy a small rate, in addition to the motieve received from the Government.

MODERN LANGUAGES

In one branch of technical knowledge our business men are as yet far behind our great continental rivals and that is in our knowledge of foreign tongues. The young people in this country, who hope to rise to some

post higher than that of the artizan, do not study modern languages to the same extent, and with the same keenness as our friends abroad. Take for example, the work of a commercial traveller The trade of a country depends, as you perhaps know, largely upon the ' pushfulness" of commercial travellers, who go everywhere with samples of goods, trying to induce people to become customers Now, unless a commercial traveller can speak some foreign tongue he will not find it easy to "push' his firm's goods in a foreign land Manufacturers of (let us say) cotton goods, need men who can travel into distant countries and speak to the people in their own language, and sell to them in the weights and meisures and comage with which the inhabitants are familiar. What would you think if a man came from France, and addressing you in the French language tried to sell you cloth at so much a metre, or wine at so many france per hectolitre? You would probably ask him first of all to speak English. and then to translate his weights and measures and coinage into lbs, yards, and shillings. That is where Figlish commercial travellers are apt to fail So few of these "ambassadors of trade are capable of conversing with foreigners in their native tongue The Germans have recognised for many years the necessity for training their clerks and commercial travellers in business methods, and have established schools and colleges where a youth may study not only foreign languages, but also the commercial usages of, and the particular exports and imports of the leading countries of the world. Some day we shall have many of such schools and colleges in this country, but, memwhile, the trade of Great Britain suffers for want of more skilful and accomplished linguists You may be interested to learn that next to I aghish

You may be interested to learn that next to I aghish the most important of all tongues for mercantile purposes is Spanish, that being the language of the vast continent of S. Amorica—a great market for Dilish goods. French and Genman are, of course, of very high value, but to the commercial travellers who can speak Spanish or Russian the richest opportunities are undoubtedly open.

It is not for business purposes only that one ought to learn foreign languages. When you grow up you will probably travel for pleasure on the continent of Europe, and unless you can understand, and to some extent speak a foreign tongue, you may find yourself in difficultiess. Moreover—and this is by far more important—to master a foreign language affords an excellent mental discipline. It unlocks to you many treasures of literatune of which you would otherwise remain ignorant. Let each boy and girl determine to acquire theoroginy at least one other language beside his own. Now that day and evening classes in modern languages are found in practically every Technical Institute and Evening School, there is no lock of opportunity. And speaking of such opportunities brings us to the consideration for a moment of those twelve institutions in London known as

THE POLYTECHNICS

In our country, as, penhaps, you have already noticed, the State is very slow to take up any work which can be undertaken by private enterprise, and the early Mechanics Institutes, and the first of the Polytechnics—the one in Regons Street, Loudon, founded by that great philanthropist Mr. Quintin Hogg—were established by private individuals who perceived the need among the working population of technological instruction. There are now many Polytechnics, supported laugely from public funds. The range of their activities is very wide, comprising both

day and evening classes. Their class rooms, laboratories, and workshops are througed with young man and women. Now that the old apprenticeship system has almost disappeared, the Technical Institutes and Polytechnics are fulfilling a most valuable function in thus training young artizans in the securific details of their craft. Livry young workman ought to spend his day partly in attending a technical school and partly in the workshop. Many timployers fully recognise this fact and arrange for their apprentices and young remployees to spend a portion of their working hours in treading the technical school artifout any loss of ways. The pasters also in each cases usually pay the small feaching dier the instruction. A bright and industrious youth his therefore, at the present day, opportunities of advancement such as were denied to an earlier generation.

The Polytechnics and similar institutions make excellent provision also for jull students. Special teaching is given in demestic suljects, such as cookery, laundrywork, sick nursing, millioner, dressmaking, upholstery, needlework, etc. There is, moreover, a recreative and sound side to the work of the Palytechnics which is intended to bring the students into pleasant social intercourse with each other. They make themselves the centre of much of the social, as well as the intellectual life of their students. No institutions in our country are performing a finer work than the Polytechnics in training the youth of both sexes to become shifful and efficient workers, and thereby valuable entrens.

Sperking at the Cambridge University Extension Summer Meeting in August 1900, Sir Hulip Magnus, M.P., and "When one considers the advintages which are offered to workmen and appendices in any of our newest Technical Schools, we recognise the immune progress

that has been made since Birkbeck first lectured to his artizan audience. It is not only that the teaching embraces new subjects never thought of as susceptible of educational treatment a century ago; it is not only that the instruction is given in palatial buildings fitted with adequate machinery and with every mechanical appliance for illustrating the lessons; but the methods of instruction are altogether new, designed not only to inform but to train, and to exhibit in a manner previously not thought of-the connection between practice and theory.

"Comparing the condition of education now with what it was in the beginning of the century, the contrast is most marked. An advanced elementary education in which manual training largely enters, is afforded absolutely free to every child in the realm. Facilities of secondary education by means of scholarships are within reach of nearly all who are fitted to profit by it. Technical and commercial instruction adapted to the requirements of the industrial classes, and to the different occupations in which they are engaged, is provided by local authorities, and University Education, including engineering in its widest sense, is available for a large and increasing proportion of the young men and women of the country."

If this was the position in 1900 before the passing of the Act of 1902, to which so many references have already been made, to a still greater degree is it true to-day. Let each of you compare the advantages of the present time in respect to the facilities for education, with those of the bygone years described in the early part of Chapter XII., and draw for yourselves the lesson which

such a comparison affords.

TRY EDUCATIONAL LABOUR

What is meant by the educational lidder or "lighway " as it is sometimes called? Surely we mean the opportunities offerded by the State to young people to climb from the primary schools up to educational institutions of the highest rank. Pich people can afford to send their children to any school or college they prefer, so the 'ladder" concerns only those boys and girls who have no other capital than their own abilities From what you have read in the priceding pages you must have recognised that the children of to day have advantages and opportunities of advancement which their forerunners never enjoyed. A boy or girl therefore, who courageously determines to "got on will find that the County and other Councils, as well as the Government, offer all manner of scholarships exhibitions, grants and burearies by which deserving pupils can pass from lower to higher places of education-even up to the University Furthermore, travelling expenses maintenance allowances, and emoluments of one sort and another are available for the assistance and support of the young student who otherwise would have at once to begin wage-carning. You would be surprised also to learn what a number of public bothes there are as well as private and philanthropic societies and guilds, all ready to help those who will help themselves. It would occupy a volume to enumerate them Ask your parents or guardians to write to the Director of Education for your County or Borough, requesting him to send you all pamphlets, etc., published by the Local Education Authority, describing the opportunities offered by the Council in the way of higher and technical education. If you live in London send to the LCC Education Offices, Victoria Embunkment, for the

172 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

handbook (by post 3d.) showing the Scholarships, etc., open to persons of both sexes. Practically all Councils offer Minor and Major Scholarships—the former to enable pupils to proceed to secondary schools, and the latter to collarses and places of higher education.

colleges and places of higher education. If you have a gift for teaching-and unless you have special aptitude do not take it up as a profession-you will find that the State is prepared to pay practically every penny of your education from childhood up to the moment when you emerge from the Training College as a fully certificated teacher (see p. 155). If you wish to learn a trade, or how to farm, there are Trade Schools and Farm Institutes now being established up and down the country, as well as the Technical Institutes and Polytechnics already described, all of them open with little or no payment to industrious and well-behaved pupils. In some cases actual money payments are made to the students to compensate for the loss suffered by being temporarily withdrawn from a wage-carning employment. When about to leave school be sure to acquaint yourself with all the opportunities afforded to you for instruction in the employment of your choice. Think of these things beforehand. Remember that the worst thing that can happen to anyone is to drift into a "blindalley" occupation, that is, one that leads nowhere. With a skilled trade at his finger ends a man can always earn his living in whatever country he ultimately settles, whereas one without a trade is often cast adrift on the world to become a burden upon his friends, or perhaps upon the rates.

We will conclude these chapters on Schools and Scholars with a short homily which you can skip if you like.

A LITTLY HOMELY

Do not think that education ends with school or college life. No greater mistake could be made. Your education ought never to cease. A good citizen will to keep abreast of modern movements in politics and society, and shoul i, therefore always be learning. Self education is the best of all educations and a loy has not got the best out of his schooldrys unless he has harnt here to learn. There is no excutee for anyone to remain an almost amount are found in every town and in almost every village, as well as the Livening (lasses already named

It is a wise and with utterance which declares that an educated man is one who knows " everything of something and something of everything ' A person who is master of some art or craft can face life with equanimity There is always work waiting for him to do A good workman, or a fine artist, or musician, or a gifted teacher enriches the community in which he dwells. He contributes to the common good. And that is why the State and the Municipalities are willing to expend such very large sums of money-all of which come, as you have already learned, out of the pockets of the taypayers and ratepayers
-upon education "Education leads to light," were the words attered once to the writer of this book by a poor labourer. This is what it ought to do even if sometimes it fails. We know from experience that crime diminishes when schools are opened and that since the Education Act of 1870 many big prisons in this country have been closed and pulled down. These things are symbolical Money spent over schools is a good investment if, thereby, boys and girls are trained up to be better workmen and better citizens. If it does not do this it has failed in its purpose. It would, indeed, he a miscrable result if a good education were to turn a promising artizan into a discontented lonfer with a distance for manual labour. Education does for the mind what the grindstone does to the stoel. By sharpening the intellect, as well as by training the reasoning faculty, and by widening the outlook, it renders man more efficient in the performance of his daily task, and of the duties of citizenship—duties which each year become more serious and more complex.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

1. Name any Endowed School in your neighbourhood. Who was its Founder, and by whom is the school managed?

2. What places of higher education are there in your district, and how is entrance obtained thereto?

3. What is the name and official address of the Director of Education in your Borough or County?

4. What is your nearest University? Are there any Scholarships from your School to the University?

5. Are there any Technical Schools, Trade Schools, or Agricultural Colleges in your town or county?

6. What do you know of the Workers' Educational Association and of its Tutorial Classes? Make a point of ascertaining all you can about this Association and its work.

7. If you were wishful to become a (a) Teacher; (b) an Engineer; (c) a Farmer; describe in each case the course of education you ought to pursue, and what facilities for such education exist in your locality.

8. Discuss the pros and cons of (a) free secondary; (b) free

university education.

 Name some "blind-aliey" occupations. Ought the State to regulate the entrance of children into such occupations?

CHAPTEP XIV

THE STATE AND THE CHILD

TRE CHILD WORKER

LESS than a century and the State cared little or nothing for the welfare of Children If the parents of a child were dead or if they were hard hearted or if unalle for any cause to look after the health happiness and education of their offspring there was nobody else to do these things. The State punished with frightful severity the children who straved into evil ways but was quite un concerned in directing them into the right paths. We have read in Chapter \II of the slow evolution of a system of national education whereby every parent can be compelled to send his child to school between the ages of 5 and 14 and we will now survey briefly what has been done by the State for the chill workers of the community. For you must never forget that the majority of children have to begin wage earning the moment the Liw allows them to lenve school

We will also ascertain what methods the State now adopts to punish and reclaim erring children who are entering upon a course of crime. And in each case we will compute the present day methods with those in force in the days of our grandfatiers. Perhaps you will then understand why this 20th Century has been called the Children's Century.

You who live in these better days when the law protects those who cannot protect themselves, and when 'Homes, Hospitals, Asylums, Associations, Societies, and Committees of all kinds are at work endeavouring to improve the lot of the young workers, can hardly believe how terrible was the fate less than a century ago of these children who had lost their natural protectors—their parents—and were thrown on the charity of the world. And in, order that you may realise your present advantages, and may determine as good citizens to head on to posterity even greater privileges than you now enjoy, we will, for a few minutes, turn over the pages of history, and learn how the child-workers fared in the early 19th century.

Before 1832

We need not go back beyond the memory of people still living. Let us glanco vory rapidly at the period before 1832 when the working classes had no votes, and the big towns no Mombers of Parliament. As this is only a little book, we will leave out altogether from our story any reference to the condition of adult workers, and confine ourselves to the lot of the children.

When machinery began to take the place of hand labour in spinning, weaving, etc., men and women began to be drawn into the towns from the rural districts on account of the higher wages which could be earned in the factories, and, of course, they took their young children with them. The wages of adults were very small in those days, but they were better than could be get by farm labour. It was soon found, however, that the duties of tending the machines, and of fetching and carrying materials, could be done by very young children. Calid

labour, was, moreover, very cheap. Employers throught it alound to pay 1s a day to a man for work which a child could do for 1d, and children were consequently drafted into the factories as soon as they could walk. When the supply in the locality was insufficient, it c deficiency was made up by bringing others from a distance The Poor Law Authorfries of London sent waccon-loads of pauter children to Lancashire. It was not uncommon for them to be put to work in the fictories, workshops, and mines at six years of age, and in going instances they began work at five. The hours of labour of children had by the first factory act in 1802, been limited to twelve but overtime constantly prolonged this period 'The parent who would endeavour to realise the life of a factory child in 1912" sair Sir Spercer Walpole in his 'History of England (Vol. III p. 201) 'should try to imagine his own little boy or girl-eight or nine years old-working in a factory. He should try to recollect that it would be his duty to rouse the chill on a coll. winters morning at five in order that it might be at its work at six, that die after day week after week, month after month, it would be forced to rive at the same hour, that with two short intervals of half an hour each, it would be kept to its dull, monotonous employment for thirteen hours every day, that during the whole of that time it would be breather; a dusty unwholesome atmosphere rarely able to relieve its limbs by sitting down, buch, upon evidence which it is impossible to dispute, was the life of every factory child before 1833. There were tens of thousands of such unfortunates in Figland alane "

And yet there were men, both in and out of Parliament, who were capable of defending this mensions system, although they had allown their pity for the sufferings of

178 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHI

dumb animals by passing in 1823 a law against the illtreatment of horses and cattle, and founding in 1824, the National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals. A child's existence in a well-managed factory was terrible enough, and it must be left to the imagination to picture its wretched life under a harsh master. (Lord Beacons-

field's novel "Sybil" offers a realistic description of the cruelties practised by a heartless employer at the time of , which we are speaking.)

In the summer of 1831, Michael Thomas Sadler, member for Newark, pressed upon the attention of Parliament the lamentable condition of the children in factories. In December of that year he introduced a bill toregulate the hours of labour of factory children. He proposed that no child under 9 years of age should be employed for more than ten hours a day. Ten hours a day was the limit of labour of a felon in prison. Should little children work longer than a convict? Fierce opposition was. offered by many masters who objected to the Government interfering with industries, and a tedious enquiry ensued, and much evidence was laid before a Select Committee of the House. Medical authorities explained the terrible effects upon children of long hours of hard work in illventilated factories. Operatives came forward to tell the tale of their own sufferings when children, and to shew their distorted limbs which had been the legacy of early and heavy labour. Lord Ashley (afterwards the 7th Barl of Shaftesbury) described visits paid by him to the hospitals in Lancashire where he found children crippled and mutilated by their work, presenting every variety of deformity "just like a crooked alphabet."

1833 AND ONHARDS

In 1833-remember the date-slavery was abolished throughout the British Purpare, and, chiefly through the untiring efforts of Lord Ashley, a lactory Act. was passed, which may be regarded as the first important step towards the reorganisation of industry by legislation, and particularly towards the protection of defenceless

It was no great reform, but it secured that in cotton and woollen mills children under 9 were not to be employed at all and under 13 were not to work over 18 hours a week, whilst young persons between 13 and 18 were not to be employed more than 69 hours per week This Act, however, did not affect silk or lace mills, or workshops, warehouses, mines and colluries where similar legislation was surely needed and where the work was not confined to 60 hours a week

In the coal puts, boys and gurls of tender years were still toiling in dark, damp unwholesome places, dragging or pushing the cars of coal through the narrow gallerns Many of the seams were only 22 or 28 inches high so that none but the small children could pass through them Lattle drudges of seven worked for 12-18 hours a day, harnessed like bonats by a chain attached to the loaded trucks, often having to crawl forward on all fours.

"No horse on an overloaded coach" says "is Spencer Walpole in his "History of Figliand," 'no donkey in a co termonger's barrow, few slaves on the properties of West Indian planters experienced the triatment which was if o lot of many children—'hurriers'—in mines,"

"Such employment," says Dr. Fruill in his "Social England" (Vol. VI. p. 268) "from the age of "appears

to have been one regular way by which Guardians of the Poor provided for their pauper charges." Their ignorance was appalling. Not one boy in ten, not one grown person in fifty could read.

Again, through the untiring advocacy of Lord Ashley, an Act was passed in 1842, which entirely prohibited the employment underground of girls and women, and of boys under the age of ten. The children's cause was now fairly started, thanks to the ceaseless efforts of Lord Ashley and his colleagues, and reforms began to quicken their nace.

In 1847, the Ten Hours Bill became law, which restricted the work of young persons under 18 in textile factories to not more than 10 hours a day, or 55 in any one week between 5.30 a.m. and 8.30 p.m. It also prohibited their working on Saturday afternoons. This modest limitation of the hours of labour of young people of both sexes was received with joy by the factory workers. Between 1860 and 1864 the principles of the last named Act were extended to many other trades by a series of Statutes. The Factory Acts of 1867, 1870, 1871 and 1874 each introduced some new feature.

1878

The famous Act of 1878,3 which consolidated 16 previous statutes, affords a prominent landmark in the history of labour legislation. Under this law children and women received still further protection. For instance, the employment of children was to be for half-time only (i.e. in the mornings or afternoons, or on alternate days); the cleaning of machinery in motion by children was forbidden; whilst numerous provisions were made as to

menl times, holidays, security against accidents inspection, sanitary matters, etc. A "child also was defined to be anyone under 14, and a "young person" anyone between 14 and 18. Speaking generally the Act of 1873 remained unaltered until 1901, when by a new Act the provisions for safeguarding the workers against accidents were strengthened, and rules were laid down for maintaining comfortable temperatures in workrooms. This Act must be remembered for it also regulates the night work of youths, and probable subsolutely the employment of children under 12 in factories, workshops, do ke, whence or laundres.

The country had now awakened to the fact that the children of one generation are the adults of the next, and that one cannot expect to ran a nation of strong, men and women, sound in mind and body, to whom the care of such an I mpire as ours can be safely entrusted, unless the children are properly fed, clothed taught, and protected until of an ago to do these things for themselves

DEFECTIVE CHILDREN

The excessive number of defective epileptic, and mentally deficient children in our midst (largely the legrey of the exil secral conditions of a former day) presents a very difficult problem for the State, for it is plain that we cannot expect a healthy race to spring from these whose faculties are unequal to undertaking the rightful duties of citizenship. Metawhile, until legislation is carried further you may remember that by on Act passed in 1893* the Elementary Education (Blin1 and Deaf) Children Act, the parent must cause a blind or deaf child to receive suitable instruction and the Local Education

^{1 1} I A VII e 22

^{\$ 65} A 57 Virt c 12

182 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

Authority is bound to provide facilities for such oducation. By another Act in 1889, the duties in respect to optioptic and feeble-minded children are substantially the same as in the case of deaf or blind children; viz., if there is a certified "Special School" near at hand, it is compulsory upon the parents to send the child to that school. In the future we shall no doubt find that the LEA's will establish more Special Schools, and also make some provision for the after-life of these unfortunates. Their case, as said above, affords one of the most difficult problems of modern eivilisation.

RECENT LEGISLATION.

The Acts of Parliament which were passed in the last. 30 years of the late century for the better protection of infant life and for the prevention of cruelty to children, have been very much extended by recent legislation. For example, in 1903 an Act was passed called the Employment of Children Act, shielding children from many hardships by regulating street trading (such as selling newspapers and matches), and by forbidding their carrying of heavy weights in factories.

In 1904 the law was still further strengthened by the Prevention of Cruelty to Children Act, which, restricts the employment of children in acrobatic and theatrical performances, and in street trading. In 1906 a most humano law was passed, the Education (Provision of Meals) Act, which allows a Local Education Authority to feed necessitous children who come to school hungry and unfed, and to recover the cost of such meals, where possible, from the parents. Thus you see, little by little,

^{62 &}amp; 63 Vict. c. 82 4 Ed. VII. c. 15.

^{# 8} Ed. VII. c. 45.

the State is tending to become the foster parent to such as are orphaned, or whose purents have failed or are unable to perform their proper and natural duties

able to perform their proper and natural duties.

In 1907 we find yet another step taken to secure the health and happiness of the boys and guls attending the public elementary schools, for in that year there came into existence a Iva-the Education (Administrative Provisions) Act,1 which decreed that the children should be medically inspected, either before or soon after, their admission to the school, and before leaving to go out into the world. This is a most silutary provision. Vast numbers of children have been me permanently injured in health for want of a little medical attention when young Mun eye, car, throat, tooth and skin troubles that would otherwise develop into serious defects or diseases can be remedied by early treatment. The future welfare of the nation will be profoundly affected by this important enactment. The provision of medical inspection has already led to the establishment of medical and dental clinics for school children, and of Open Air Schools and Classes Chantable societies have also come forward to supply those who could not otherwise afford them with surgical appliances, etc.

In 1907 a very useful clause was added to a law dealing with public health (l'ublic Health Amendment Act), which gave powers to local authorities to set apart a portion of a public park for the sole use of the children, and to supply and fix apparatus for games and recreations. That, you will admit, is the part of a kind foster parent, and nothing is more delightful than to see the abundant happiness that such provision for their enjoyment in the public parks confers upon the hitle stret-bard children of London. The London County and other Councils also

184 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

provide officers to watch over the children at play, and to protect them from molestation or danger.

A RETROSPECT AND A PROSPECT

Let us pause for a moment and contemplate these wonderful achievements. In 1802 we find the first factory Act. feebly attempting to remedy conditions of child-labour too dreadful for description. A century later, a code of factory legislation which is the admiration of all other countries! Why have we in this little book on citizenship thus re-opened the sad past, and traced the growth of the factory laws? Why did we in similar manner investigate the slow development of our educational system? Why shall we in the next chapter likewise review the steady evolution of higher ideals in the treatment of young offenders against the law? What is the citizen, young or old, to learn from all this? The answer is short. We learn from these things the gradual triumph of Right over Wrong. Progress may seem slow, and many hearts have been broken in its tardy advance. But it is sure. There is something divine in the breast of every human being that answers to the call of Right, and if Right is constantly and faithfully held up before their vision, mankind will follow it. Never lose hope, therefore, in any great cause that has for its object the righting of wrongs, or the amelioration of the lot of the downfallen and oppressed. Take heart of grace from what you have read about the victory of great and righteous causes. In Education, for instance, we have seen the public conscience stirred until now it holds that the State-

> White she exacts allegiance shall admit An obligation on her part to teach Tham who are born to serve her and obey;

nding berself by statute to recure
for all the children whom her soil maintains.
 The rediments of latters, so that none.
 be forced.
 drafte strongly weary life without the nid.

Of intellectual implements and tools.

The packs a rophetic vision as you now know has been

The preds prophetic vision as you now know his been fully reclised. We have seen too that the State by degrees has realised that she must retteet and chamiten the vounce

and defenctless, and make their wrongs her cause. In the next chapter we shall discover again that the State is slowly realising that harsh and cruel laws are no cure for time, and that there are nobler ways of reforming the offender than by inflicting junishment. Everywhere and on all sides we are watching the slow triumph of Right over Wrong.

Locking there was a law with can say that our Fig.

Looking backward then who can say that our England is not better than it was a century ago? Looking forward, who shall say it will not be still better a continuence? But only by patiently working for lofty and noble causes. We are enjoying to day the fruits of the labours of the faithful workers of an earlier day. Let it be your aim to earry the torch forward. There is no lack of great causes. Seek one, and make it your own, and "whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might."

THE CHILDLES S CHAPTER

And now at length we arrive at the great Children's Charter, the Children Act of 1908 which gathers up into it of many little odds and ends of previous

Worlaworth 'The Lacursian' Book IX. (written about 1913)

^{* 8 1-4} VII c 67

laws, and adds much that is new and important, Under this comprehensive Act the child's progress from infancy to youth is safeguarded at practically every stage. So minute are its directions that it even prohibits the leaving of little children under seven in a room with an open fire, without a fireguard. It forbids entirely the sending or taking out of children into the streets to beg or sing or solicit alms; it punishes the people who send or take them out to do these things; it prohibits children under 14 from engaging in any dangerous acrobatic performances, whether in public or private; it prohibits the giving of intoxicants to children under 5, and fines the publican who allows children to come into his-bar. It forbids the sale of gunpowder and cigarettes to children. and makes it an offence to invite young persons to bet. If they are cruelly treated this remarkable Act says that children may take refuge in a nolice-station, or in a · hospital or workhouse, and there be kept and kindly treated until the magistrates can make satisfactory arrangements for their future care. You will learn, too, in the next chapter that special Courts are established by this Act for children, at which juvenile offenders are tried, quite apart from the adult criminals. The idea underlying this provision is to protect young people from all contact with the contaminating influence of hardened or habitual criminals. Thus, you see, from the few details that have been cited above, how wide is the operation of this splendid law, and how it endeavours to repair, the terrible conditions of the first portion of the last century, when the children of the poor were even less cared for than the dumb animals. The general aim of Parliament has been to assure to the rising generation the right to a healthy and happy childhood, by shielding them from all forms of cruelty as well as from unwholesome and

degrating influences. To secure this end parents and guardians are made responsible and can be fined or imprisoned if they fail in their duty. Indeed the Childran Act requires the attendance of the parent at the Court (if any of these regulations are broken), and he must show—if he would escape a fine—that he took proper care of his child.

Fven so recently as 1910 another protecting arm has been thrown by the State round the children of the poor, by a law ¹ which makes it an offence to self spirits to any young person under 16 or beer to any child under 14, except in corked and sailed bottles. When you thus compare the lot of the child of to-day with that of the little ones of whom you have read in the early part of this chipter you will agree that the 20th century does, indeed, morit the title of the Children's Cantury.

CHILD WELFARE SOCIETIES

Not only has the State acting through Parliament, recognised its duty to the Child but numbers of voluntary societies and associations have also been established in response to the general sentiment, charging themselves with the welfare of the young. One fine example of such voluntary agencies is that founded by the late Benjumi Wangh, and incorporated in 1895 by Royal Charter under the title of the National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children. Sud it is to think that such an organisation should be necessary, but its records only too fully show how great a call there has been for its activates.

Of the numberless other voluntary agencies which aim

Licensing Consulidation Act 10 L1 VII & 1 Geo. V c. 24.

²³ Leicester Square Loudon W

at helping children and young persons at critical periods in their lives one can only indicate a very few.

More definitely concerned with boys and girls at the moment they are thrust out into the world to gain their livelihood are the

JUVENICE ADVISORY COMMITTEES

established under the Labour Exchanges Act 1 and the Education (Choice of Employment) Act. These most admirable voluntary organisations have been formed to give children information, advice, and assistance with respect to their choice of a career, and to prevent the more promising boys and girls from entering "blind-alley" occupations (such as errand boys, golf-caddies, etc.), which attract by reason of the immediate higher wage, but which offer no permanent prospects. The value of this social work cannot be over-rated; for unless some such preventive measures be taken and systematically followed up, there is a very real danger lest the community may be burdened by an increasing number of persons leading futile or perverted lives, valueless to the State, and a menace to society. What we need are healthy, intelligent, self-reliant and self-supporting men and women-people of character-capable of fulfilling all the duties of citizenship, and playing their rightful part in the national life.

The State and the Municipalities which are the largest of all employers of labour, ought to be the last against whom the charge should be laid of creating blind-alley compations. Unfortunately, many of the boy-employees are turned adrift from Government offices at about the age of 18-20. An attempt is now being made in some Government Departments to check this abuse. The Post Office in particular has announced that it will no longer

^{1 9} Ed. VII. c. 7.

^{2 10} Ed. VII. & 1 Geo. V. c. 87.

160

take on more boys than it can absorb into the permanent

service

There is now a Juvenile Advisory Committee in practically every distinct in London. The address of the office of the nearest local Committee can always be obtained from the Head Teacher of the Public Elementary School of the district in which you reside

School of the district in which you reside

Operating in the same direction are the Apprenticeship Associations, which have done and are still doing fine work by promoting a thorough in listing truining for boys and girls, by apprenticeship and offer methods including arrangements for attendance at Trade Schools and at Technical Classes. Such associations work through local committees which collect information and find suitable openings for boys and girls who apply to their for help. They see as far as they can that fair terms are secured for the apprentice and that only satisfactory candidates are introduced to the employers. The Javenile Advisory Committees co-operate extensively with these Apprenticeship Associations and in some cases have absorbed the latter into themselves.

OTHER VOLUNTARY AGENCIES

Of other voluntary agencies having for their object the increased welfare of the young we must not overlook the Children's Care Committees which of late years have been formed in most large towns in the country. The inestimable social and charitable work of these organisa time is almost entirely carried on it youngen, whose self sternscript real for the welfare of the youngest members of the community is one of the nation s most precious assets. These Committees deal with the health

and feeding of necessitous and neglected school children; with the provision of boots for the poorest scholars; with their recreation outside school hours, by forming "play centres," and organising the play of the children living in the poorest and most crowded quarters of the towns, and with the innumerable incidents of child-life where wise counsel and timely help may save from disaster, partient larly at the time of transition from school-life to the life of adult employment. They also encourage children to join an evening continuation class as soon as they cease to attend the day school. The Invalid Children's Aid Association 1 is yet another of these voluntary agencies for social service among the London Poor, Its activities are directed towards assisting invalid and crippled children. by providing medical advice, nursing care, surgical appliances, wheelchairs, and other comforts. Through its kindly offices children are boarded out in the country and at the seaside, and when restored to health an endeavour is made to place them in occupations suitable for personsphysically handicapped. The Children's Aid Society,2 working in connection with the Reformatory and Refuge Union, is engaged in rescuing destitute and neglected children by placing them in industrial schools or in homes under the care of respectable people. The Boys' Country Work Society 8 finds its sphere of operations in placing boys of good character on farms in the country. where they at once become self-supporting. To supervise the progress of boys and girls thus placed out by the aid of such societies as above named, the services of a number of voluntary workers are enlisted to make periodical visits. and report to the society upon the welfare of its charges.

Denison House, Vauxball Bridge Road, London, S.W.

^{2 117,} Victoria Street, London, S.W. 27, John St., Adelphi, London, W.O.

The foregoing are but a very few of the numerous organisations which concern themselves with child welfare, and practically all their work is performed voluntarily and without pay. It is one of the most hopeful auguries of the future of our nation that so many workers can be found whose sole reward is the conceinness that they are labouring in the cause of humanity. You will thus find, when you leave school, a boundless field of social service and planty of scope for any devire you may feel to play the part of a good ettizen. Make it your duty to discover the names of all the voluntary and charitable organisations op rating in your neighbourhood, and whether there is among them any scope for such services as you can offer. Remember that workers are wanted quite as much and often even more than mone; Don't stand aside, therefore, because your purse is empty. There are happily plenty of rich people who are glad to provide funds for good purposes. It is the workers who are too often lacking.

Before closing this long chapter we must spend a few minutes in considering the present condition of what is known as

THE POOR LAW CHILD

A parent ought, of course, to lodge, clothe, feed, cleanse, protect and educate his child, and he can be prosecuted if he fails to failfil these duties. But some parents are devend not only of means, but also of that natural affection which even the dumb animals show towards their of spring; and in the case of forsaken children, as also of destitute orphisms, the State has to exercise the parental function. Such children come under the Foor Law, and unless some charatable organisation takes them up (like

those instituted by the late Dr. Barnardo, at Stepney, or by the late Mr. Müller at Bisicol, which are both non-scetarian; or the Church of England Waifs and Strays Society) there is nothing else for the poor little ones but to come under the care of the Guardians. You have learnt how the Guardians of a past day drafted waggonloads of these desolate creatures away to the factories and mines. You will now hear with pleasure how

loads of these desolate creatures away to the factories and mines. You will now hear with pleasure how different is the treatment of the workhouse child of to-day.

If you know Charles Dickons's novel, "Oliver Twist," you will recall the miserable conditions of the young inmates of the workhouses of his time. Let us compare that dismal picture with the methods of our own century in dealing with children who, through no fault of their own, find themselves cast upon the charity of the State. Having undertaken the maintenance of a child the Guardians can discharge their duties in various ways. They can maintain him in a workhouse—this way is rapidly going out of favour—or they can board him out,

if an orphan. They can also send a girl to a training home for domestic service, or a boy to a training ship, or apprentice him (if over 12) to a trade, etc., or (with his own consent) emigrate him to Canada. The children who are boarded out may be sent to a "Cottage Home," such as that at Sideup in Kent, established by the Greenviel Union. There, dotted over a large park, are homes for "cottage father and mother." Trades are taught in admirably equipped workshops, whilst a gymnasium, a swimming bath, and other forms of recreation provide wholesome anusement for leisure hours. In no way are the boys and girls made to feel that they are inferior beings. On the contrary, opportunity is provided for a

start in life on a par with that of the average workingclass member of the community. In numerous cases the poor law children are 1 at 1 ito "Scattered Homes," each under the care of a kind and capable feater mother. All of them attend the public elementary school of their neighbourhood just like other children, and the regresch of pauperism is not illowed to darken their young lives. In every way possible the child is ifforded the happiness of home life instead of the cold misery of an "institution" The former barrack like workhouse schools where hun dreds of these waifs were bearded and taught together, and stamped with the hatel name of a uper are rap dly full ing into disus, under the more humano legislation of the present day I the 20th entury Poor Law Child the history of Oliver Twist must appear like a monatrous creation of the new list's fancy Lattle does such a child suspect how much he ewes for his happier lot to the descriptive genins of Charles Dudous whose burning love for humanity was only equilled by his unrivalled power of touching the hearts of his readers with the sorrows of the pour

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

- 1 Find whether in your town or district there is an officer of (1) the National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children (2) the National Society for the Frevention of Cruelty to Animals.
- 2 Have you a Juvenile Advisory Committee in your neighbourhood, or any society for assisting young people to find suitable employment?
- 3 Make a list of Charitable and Philanthropic Societies in your district, and the object and aim of each
- in your anteres, and the object and aim or even

 4. Is there a Health Visitor in your town! If so what
 are his or his diffuse?

PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP 5. Name some of the trades in your locality that are

scheduled as dangerous to health. 6. Are there any Cottage Homes, or Scattered Homes for poor law children near you; or a Workhouse School

7. Discuss the question of what to do with the mentally

defective when they get beyond school age. 8. What was the "useful trade" to which Oliver Twist was set in the workhouse? (See Chap. II. of the novel.)

CHAPTER XV

THE STAIL IND THE CHILD (Continued)

THE JUVENILE OFFENDER

THEFF is an old Latin phrase—I t the descenses Arcrateaving how simple this to take the d winward path. Lach of us well knows how easy it us to do wrong, for there is only one right way and so many wrong ones

Let us therefore to this chapter consider the treat ment that the State meter to children who have taken some downward step that has brought them into the hands of the police. But before we examine the modern way of dealing with young offenders, we will-13 we did in the case of the child workers-turn lack the pages of history and see what a titule the State formerly adopted towards the cluldren who had fullen within the clutches of the law A comparison of present day methods with those of the century just past will help us latter to understand the practice of to-day, when the nation is straving to reclaim an I reform rather than to avenge itself upon ill-doers. We have at length recognised in our laws the fact that many young officiders have no chance of growing into good citizens. They may have been been and reared am let victous surroundings and to punish the for the sins of others is neither nict nor wise trying to reclaim the beginner in crime and restoral to an honest and useful life, is a development and

196 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

recent legislation, as you will quickly see if we look back upon the early days of the 19th century.

THE BAD OLD TIMES

In the Library of the Inner Temple in London there are several shelves filled with the records of the criminal trials at the Old Bailey—now called the Central Criminal Court. It is a heartrending task to peruse these "Sessions Papers" of long ago, for they exhibit what we have termed the trightful severity of the English Criminal Code of former days, towards young and old alike of both sexes.

We will dip into these rarely-opened volumes. Let us take down this one dated 1813. What a fearful record we find there of legalised butchery! Here straight. way in January of that year we find John Champlain, aged 17, sentenced to death for stealing 16 yards of carnet. It appears, however, that as his character had up to then been uniformly good, his sentence was commuted to one of "transportation for seven years!" What that meant we shall see by and by. Some men preferred death to the miseries of transportation. Turn over a few pages. Everywhere the reports seem to end with that dread word DEATH. And yet the offences, generally were trifling thefts or assaults, or matters which to-day would be dealt with summarily in a police court by the Magistrates, and for which a small fine or a. birching, or committal to a reformatory or industrial school would be the utmost penalty. Indeed, most of the offences would be dealt with under the Probation of Offenders Act (see p. 202), and the young culprit would be discharged, and told that so long as his conduct was satisfactory he would not be called up for sentence.

197

But it was not so in the early 19th century. See how severely the boys and girls of this day were treated. For instance, on 17th February, 1813, William Collins, aged 15, for stealing a pocket book and pencil, was transported for seven years! On the same day Fleanor Condon, aged 14, a young domestic servant, was sentenced to death for stealing some money of his masters from a drawer which was left open though, on account of her age she was recommended to mercy. In November of the same very Mary Ruby—only 15—stole six yards of ribbon! And for this petty theft she was ordered to be transported for seven years! We know nothing further of her melanchely fitte but that her life was broken and runned at its outset by the cruel and insunsate laws of her time is certain.

TI ANSIDETATION

And what was this "transportation" that was awarded so readily for every imaginable offence? It meant penal servitude in a distant unipeopled, semi-tropical colony, to which the unhappy prisoners were conveyed in connect slips or "hulks," floating prisons where, confined in dark cells and chained to the floor, they died like flies. The survivors, after a coyage listing months—sometimes as surich as 9 months when the destination was Austrulia—nien, women and children were set to hard labour under the most bruthlising conditions. Sometimes they were lice need out—to all intents and purposes soid—to planters and others who wanted cherp bluourers. Lecape was punished by death. Such was the lot of those who were "fortunite" enough to escape the gallows.

It would be easy to fill this book with many worse cases than the foregoing which have just been taken at

random from the pages of the above-named volume of Sessions Papers.

SLOW IMPROVEMENT

Put the book away, and come nearer to our own days. Surely in 1837, the year in which Queen Victoria came to the throne, the law must have become less brutal than in 1813! Not yet-but improvement was near at hand. Open the volume for 1837. Here is the very first case tried at the Old Bailey in that year, George Doyle, aged 16, indicted for breaking into a dwelling house at night. He stole nothing: nevertheless, this lad of 16 was condemned to death after a trial lasting a very few minutes, and he was duly hanged! The next case is that of a young man aged 19 indicted of stealing a purse containing £1 8s. 6d. Again the sentence was death, and it was, of course, carried out. Turn over a few score pages. What is this? Michael Roach, aged 13, transported for seven years for stealing a pair of boots worth 4s. 6d.! Pass on quickly. Turn over hundreds of pages-August, 1867, Queen Victoria is now on the throne. Still the same cruel story. Robert Reynolds, aged 14, transported for seven years for stealing a pocket handkerchief, value 3s. !

Pat the volume away. Enough has been quoted from these ghastly records to show you how the State treated youthful offenders in the days of your grandfathers. You must picture for yourself the measures dealt out to adult criminals. Death was the penalty for some 220 effences. Girls in their teens shared equally with the other sex in the awful punishments inflicted by the law. And yet crime flourished! We have had slowly to learn that crime is largely the product of ignorance and injustice,

and that in proportion as the social conditions of the peer are improved, and their education cared for, so do the gallows and gaols become unnecessary.

In 1831 there were 1001 people sentenced to death in our country, though they were not all hanged. In 1835 there were only 5.23. What happened between these years? If you look back at the last chapter you will see that remedial legislation if if factory wirkers dates from 1833. The full in the criminal ligures is not a mere concidence. Each improvement in the lot of the libouring classes and cach step in the direction of greater humanity in the transment of the criminal his been aften ked by a diagnation of the angust of crime.

About 18.8 a more merciful spirit began to prevail the laws were altered and people were no longer condumned to death for trivial ofteners. The public conscience gray more sensitive. In 1860 transportation was abolished in 1868 public executions were probabled, and in 1872 the stocks were used for the last time. Capital punishment is now practically matricial to the crune of murder, although there are one or two other off neet still known to the law (e.g. high treason) for which the death penalty may be awarded.

You should acquaint yourself with the work of the great reformers of the 19th century, such as Sir Sinniel Lomilly, Sir James Mickantosh, and others through who a humanitarian labours the old barbaric criminal code was such away. You should read too of John Howard, and of Phizabeth Fry and her friends the Gurneys and Buxtons and of their campaign against the narrow, underground foul dens which served for prisons, in which hundreds of hapless folk—tried and untired, young and old—were huddled together in chains, and how, through their persistent efforts those site hetches of

erime, vice, and disease were abolished for sver. The story is too long to tell here, but you will find it in Dr. Traill's "Social England," in Sir Speneer Walpole's "History of England," and in numerous other works dealing with various phases of the social transformations of the Victorian Era. Tew of the above-named workers for the good of humanity lived to see any appreciable result of their labours. But they sowed the seed which afterwards ripened into the legislative enactments that the 20th century now enjoys.

THE NEW ERA

At the outset let us state that by the Children Act of 1908 (see p. 185), capital punishment and penal servitude can no longer be awarded to young people under 16, nor any form of imprisonment to those under 14. How that would delight the heart of Sir Samuel Romilly could be icturn to earth again! "But what," he might ask, "have you substituted for the old-time punishments?" The answer would be something like this-"We have established a national system of schools where our children have a moral and physical training such as they never before enjoyed in the history of our country; we have endeavoured by labour legislation to make their life brighter and more comfortable, so that there is less inducement to rebel against the law; we are studying how to stop crime at its source; we are beginning to regard the parents or guardians as being more at fault than the child in a large number of cases that come before the Courts, and we are making it more difficult for them to shirk their parental responsibilities; we have set up Children's Courts, whose object is not so much to punish the juvenile offender as to bring him back by watchful care to the path of rectitude, we have passed Acts which allow the Judge to send a first offender away without punishment, on his promise to amend his conduct, we have established Industrial Schools for boys and girls who are likely to become young criminals if they are not promptly removed from the surroundings it which they are living. we have substituted the school for the gael in our Reformstories, we have established 'Berstal Institutions' for young men and women between 16 and 21, who would otherwise be sent to penal servitud, but who we believe are still capable of being reclaimed in addition to all these things provided by the law we have founded a vast number of voluntary spectres-some of which are named in the last chapter-for belong young persons into the right course at the most critical moment in their lives By such inhibitened means as these we are trying to prevent the flow of recruits into the criminal classes, and to restore to a decent life those who have not gone too far along the downward rath

Let us examine in a little fuller detail some of these various agencies for checking the growth of crime in its early stages, and first of all impact the work of the

CHILDREN & COURTS

The Children Act provides that children shall not be permitted either before trial or afterwards to be as-ociated with old or hardened criminals. The young folks must not even be brought into the Court until the whiteases have been disposed of, and no speciators or any other people except the parents and those immediately concerned, are allowed to be present at their trial. The Act provides also for a separatic Court House to be used if necessary, but at present it is usual for the ordinary

Court of Petty Sessions to be turned into a Children's Court as soon as the older prisoners have been dealt with and removed. In its methods of procedure the general principle is to place the children under kindly supervision, and among good influences, so that they may learn the value of upright conduct in bringing about their own happiness as well as that of the community in which they live. This good purpose is assisted by the Summary Jurisdiction Act of 1879,1 which gives the alternative of paying a fine instead of going to prison; and by the laws for first offenders,2 which save all those whose first lapse is not of the most desperate nature from acquaintance with prison life; also by a later and praiseworthy piece of remedial legislation effected in 1907,3 whereby special Probation Officers-generally women-are appointed to look after young people who have been found guilty of an offence which in former days would have landed them in prison, but who have been permitted conditional release upon "entering into recognisances" to be of good behaviour. The Children's Probation Officers advise and assist the parents in the management and supervision of the young delinquents, and report to the Court as to their behaviour. By means such as these, it is attempted to save boy and girl offenders from the lasting disgrace of having been sent to prison,

Imprisonment is rarely helpful in the reformation of character. Instead of being "moral hospitals," prisons are too often "criminal manufactories." To send a youth under 20 to gool for some trilling offence is still common in this country, though public opinion is gradually setting against this practice. Imprisonment should be the last

^{1 42 &}amp; 48 Viet, c. 49.

^{2 50 &}amp; 51 Viet. c. 25; 1 Ed. VII. c. 20.

^{*} Probation of Offenders Act, 7 Ed. VII. c. 17.

resort of the State and not the first. But as the law stands at present, a person over 14 is regarded as an adult in very many respects, and punished as such. Thus if charged with some petty offince (eg the breach of a bye law) he is ordered to pry a fine or in the alternative to go to preson for a term of days or weeks Very usually the young fellow is unable to pay the money, and therefere, must go to gool This is nothing less than directions, and lave the law open to the charge of manufacturing criminals. Hal the youth been liberated on bail and permitted to clear off the fine by instalments he would probably never have troubled the courts again. But having once been dubbed a criminal and gool bird, he finds himself looked upon askance by society and all too easily falls into bad company, and ultimately sinks into the rinks of the habitual offenders.

INDUSTRIAL SCHOOLS AND REPORMATORIES

The germ of the modern Industrial School is to be sought for in the Regged Schools (see p. 147) intended to save destricte children from vaganney and orime. The critical industrial schools were, as a matter of fact characteristic material schools were as a matter of fact characteristic material children who had not necessarily infringed the criminal law. The present Industrial Schools—of which there are about 100 in Figland and Wales—date from 1860,1 and provide a much needed haven of refoge for children removed by order of the magistrates from had homes or defraved surroundings whilst at the same time they afford an excellent industrial training and with it a prospect of leading in honest useful life in after years.

First offenders-where the offence is not very grive-

^{1 27 &}amp; 30 Val e 118

204 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

are frequently committed to the Industrial Schools, but the worst of the juvenile delinquents, such as would (if they had been older) have been sentenced to penal servitide, are sent to Reformatory Schools, which are and always have been, since they came under the law in 1854, penal as well as educational establishments.

Now that Local Authorities have power to establish and aid reformatories as well as industrial schools there is some danger of losing sight of the distinction between the two. Committal to an industrial school is intended to benefit rather than punish, whereas detention in a reformatory (of which there are between 40 and 50 in England and Wales) forms a definite part of our system of correction for young criminals under 16. In both Industrial Schools and Reformatories, however, the training is such as to equip the children for useful occupations. On leaving, the boys often join the army, whilst the girls take very largely to domestic service. Some of the industrial schools for boys are training ships, and here, of course, the instruction is intended to train the lads to become sailors. There is a movement at present to emigrate many of both sexes to Canada, where, in a new land, removed entirely from the old associations, and under the kindly care of various philanthropic organisations, the young people may make a fresh start with every prospect of a successful career. It is satisfactory to learn that by far the greater proportion of the children leaving the Industrial Schools and Reformatories pursue an honest life of work. Less than a fifth of their numbers relapse into evil courses.

POESTAL INSTITUTIONS

Though the law breakers of whom we are now about to speak are not exactly 'juvenile offenders | yet if ey touch so closely upon this class that they have been given by the police the name of payantle adults. You will n member that the Industrial Schools on I Reformatories are intended only for persons under the age of 16 and although the law regards a person of 11 as old enough to have reached veirs of discretion and to be therefore punishable in the same way as these of more mature years there has arisen of late a feeling that it is worth while making a strong endeavour tore from the juvenileadult criminal that is the person between the age of 16 and 21 In 1895 a Committee on Prisons reported that "under the present system numbers of young prisoners came out of prison in a condition as bad or worse than that in which they came in To amend this sinte of things on a lourable voluntary association began (with the co operation of the prison authorities) in 1902, to collect at horstal Prison near I ochester those juvenileadults who, it was believed, would prove amenable to remedial measures. Instead of the ordinary good discipline, the convicts were put to work in the fields, where they were taught market-gardening, flower culture builling, etc. Indoors they had lessons and levint carpentry, plumbing blacksmith's and tinsmith's work, cookery, bakery, shoemaking, etc. They were spared also the ignominy of convict dress and of association with the older criminals. They were, whilst well behaved, permitted the use of library books allowed visits from friends, and other privileges. Remark ble success attruded the experiment, and the methods advocated by this noble society have now received the sanction of the

law. In 1908 the Legislature passed the Prevention of Crime Ack, which gives the Court, power to pass a sentence of detention. In a Borstal Institution, of from 1. to 3 years. When the time for discharge approaches, the Borstal Association takes the youth in hand and tries to secure work for him, and give to the young fellow a chance by putting his feet in the right way to earn an honest livelihood. No greater service of citizenship can be suggested than preventive work of this character.

DECREASE OF CRIME

And what now—it may be asked—has been the result of this war against crime? Has compulsory education helped at all in this direction? Has the greater leniency of the law been attended with a diminution in the number of criminals? Have the self-denying, zealous, and persistent efforts of the numerous voluntary societies charging themselves with the care of young people been rewarded with any measure of success? Is our England of to-day better for these labours of love?

The answer to each of these questions must be an emphatic "Yes." Not only has the percentage diminished, but the total volume of crime is less than it was at the passing of the Elementary Education Act of 1870, when though the population of the Kingdom has increased in the meantime by over 40 %. In 1870 when, as you have learnt, the national system of education was inaugurated, there were in England and Wales over 100 prisons, all full; there are now about 60 half-engipt! You many erhaps be aware, if you live in London, that a vast prison occupied—not so very many years ago—the site of the Tate Gallery on the Embankment, whilst yet another

hugo prison—the famous Clerkenwell Gad—las given place in recent years to blocks of offices and workmens dwillings. Upon the day that these lines were i need the author's eye was caught by the following lines in the Thirst of that date—In his address to the Graul Jury at its opening of the Sessions the Charman said it was a matter of great gratification to all interested in the welfare and the prosperity of the County (of London) that during the last three or four years the number of indictable offences had decreased by nearly 20 per cent

A century has passed since Sir varied Romilly's hist warning was uttered in Parliament against the making of criminals by the action of a too hards law. His was indeed a voice crying in the wilderness. His appeals fell on deaf cars and he died saddened and discouraged by years of unavailing effort. But his labour was not in vain, as we now recognise.

Let every social worker therefore who is inclined to fret at the apparent inefficiency of his self imposed toil, draw fresh courage from Romelly a life and mission Sconer or later, here or hereafter as the proplet said of old, "he shall see of the travail of his soul and shall be satisfied."

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

I What ought the attitude of an employer to be towards a boy or girl of 10 who, having been in (a) an Indistrial School, (b) a Reformatory, (c) Prison for a trivial offence, applies to him for employment?

2 Are there any Industrial Schools in your district where children attend during the day time only! If so, what class of offenders are send to such schools, and how for is the system found satisfactory?

3. In the United States they have established a "George Junior Republic," to which young offenders are sent. Upon

they resume criminal practices. In this connection discuss the proposition, "Train the young and retain the old

in this country? If so, where?

4. If capital punishment were to be abelished here as it is in Switzerland and Italy, what would you substitute in its

place?

- (2) the incorrigible idler? 6. Some offenders are no sooner released from prison than

criminal."

. 5. How would you deal with (1) the habitual trains:

what principles is it conducted? Have we anything like it

CHAPTER XVI

MASTERS AND MLN

THUR UNIONS

To give you in a short chipter any adequate picture of the 'labour movement is quite impossible. The most we can do is to pive the my for your own inquiries when you come fue to five in later years with the most difficult problem of our civic life, viz the relationship of I implovers to I imployed or as is often suid, of Capital to Labour. Some main principles however, you can easily grasp.

In the first place you will readily understand that a poor man's capital consists of his strungth and skill, and unless he can find some work upon which he can exercise his strength and skill in ritum for wags a he must starve. In his anxiety to obtain work he is afruid to happle with an employer over the matter of wages, for feir he may lose the job altogether. Consequently, so long as workmen art singly, they are at a disadiantage in bargruning about wages and hours of work.

At a very early stage in our industrial history, working men siw that their only chance of rusing their wages and of shortining the hours of labour was to come line together and act in unison. The mere instinct of self-preservation impelled them to some form of "collectiva burgaining." But this soon brought them into collision

with the law, for severe restrictions had been placed by Parliament upon combinations among labourers for such purposes as raising the rate of their pay. From the reign of Edward I to George IV. some 30-40 Acts of Parliament were passed, designed to prevent what we nowadays term the "organisation of labour." Combinations of workmen were not merely forbidden; they were held to be criminal. They were regarded as contrary to public policy, as being in restraint of trade, and the participators in such combinations were treated as malefactors and prosecuted for conspiracy! Trade Unions were, indeed, established secretly, but they were always liable to be broken up by the rude hand of the law. In 1800 a very drastic measure 1 was directed against such organisations. and when introduced was commented upon in the Times newspaper of 7th January, 1800, in these words: "One of the first Acts of Imperial Parliament will be for the prevention of conspiracies among journeymen tradesmen to raise their wages. All benefit clubs and societies are to be immediately prohibited."

Under this Act, all persons were forbidden to combine with others to advance their weges or decrease the quantity of their work, on pain of being brought before a Justice of the Peace (one J.P. was enough), and sentenced to three months imprisonment. And you have read in the last chapter what the prisons were like in those days! Such treatment filled the working classes with discontent, which manifested itself in riots and acts of violence, as well as in strikes which failed miscrably for lack of funds. Though imprisonment and transportation were vigorously applied, the working men never ceased to protest against the conditions imposed upon them by the State and by their employers, until at length, in 1824, a

law was pared, allowing merkaren to combine under the same conditions as other people. Although trade unions were now permitted to exist, they were hedged about with immimerable restrictions. The Legislature was still haunted with the idea of conspiracy, and only out of fear of rick and rebellion went so far as to constitute the meeting of workmen to discuss questions affecting their wages, etc. They might enter into any agreement with their employer for fixing wages and hours, but if they began to make regulations about piecework or the number of apprentices, they at once again because conspirators.

You will see from the following incident how danger.

ous it was for workpeople to exceed the very limited privileges afforded to them by the law In 1834 it occurred to some people that an organisation similar to a Trade Union might be extended with advantage to agricultural labourers whose wages were intrably small—7s to 8s a week. Derset-hire was a purely agricultural county, and there a union was formed which in no way broke the combination laws. It came to the ears of the authorities, however, that the men had bound themselves numerates, however, that the men had bound themselves together with an eath to be faithful to each other. That was enough. There existed an old law making it an offince to administer illegal oaths. The statute had been rarely enforced, practically it had been disregarded by every trade union in the Kingdom. But just at this moment public opinion was roused against the unions. So the rusty old statute was resultanted to purish the men who had formed the first agricultural union. Six writched labourers, wholly ignorant of the him, were tried at Dorchester for administering illegal caths, and were sentenced to be transported for 7 years. A storm of indignation swept over the country Some 20,000 to

30,000 workers assembled in London on 21st April, 1834, and marched on Whitehall. There was no bloodshed, but the Government felt compelled to release the men. Communication was slow in those days, and it took two years before the convicts—now exalted almost into the position of national heroes—were granted a free pardon and allowed to return home.

The position of trade unions in the eve of the law continued very unsatisfactory for another generation. Though not actually prohibited by statute their position was not legally acknowledged. Their members were often prosecuted for, and convicted of, conspiracy. Still they grew and multiplied, although Act after Act was passed to regulate their proceedings. Not until 1875, when two famous laws were placed on the statute book,1 did trade unionists feel themselves safe from the charge of conspiracy. By one of these Acts, which has been dubbed the "charter of trade unions," the proceedings in trade disputes were henceforth to be of a civil and not of a criminal nature. Trade unions were no longer to be deemed illegal associations, nor might workmen be prosecuted for combining to strike unless the means they used were unlawful. Unions were allowed to hold property, and could sue to recover that property if it was stolen or kept unlawfully from them. Thus after centuries of struggle, the right of combination for the protection or advancement of their interests, and a legal recognition of their trade unions, were secured to workmen. But this is not all.

In 1906 a measure called the Trade Disputes Act, put Trade Unions in an exceptionally privileged position. For no "tortious" act done illegally during a trade dispute can a Union now be made responsible. Only the several individuals who do the illegal acts can be made hable. Though the Union may advise an I encourage its members to Iresh the law it cannot be reached by the law. That is a position which many people deem unduly privileged.

THE AIM OF THE UNIONS

A very great many tral unions some of them ex cordingly rich and powerful have now been formed in this country. The Provide objects of these amons may be triefly summyrised as follows -to impresse the wages of their members to shorten hours d un to 8 hours a day for every trule (this has been effected in the case of underground workers), to secure a minimum living wage to everybody to limit overtime to restrict the number of apprentices to regulate and even in some trades to abolish piecework to demarkate the classes of work to be performed by each trade, and to force trade-unionism upon all workpeople by refusing to work alongside of non-unionists. To achieve these ends they have united their forces and succeeded in sending a considerable number of their representatives into Parlament. You may or may not approve of all these objects. It is not our place here however, to criticise the aims or actions of the trade unions, but simily to learn what sort of bodies they are, and what they are strain, to attain. This much is certain, however, that "collective largaining" is now too firmly estal lished ever to be displaced

The above named objects for which the Unions are northing involve a considerable expenditure of money. We find, therefore, that trude unions make a 'levy' upon all their members—of perlaps 6d or even is a

214 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

week-whilst during disputes, when large sums are being paid out, the levy may be considerably higher. The contributions of the unions are not, however, solely used for militant purposes. Though the main object of the funds is undoubtedly to support members when engaged in disputes, some of the unions also provide "unemployed benefit" for members who are temporarily. out of work. Most of the more firmly established unions further add to these functions those of a "friendly society"; that is, they provide sick, accidentsuperannuation, and funeral benefits. But as the "fighting funds" of a trade union are not kept apart from those intended for provident benefits, a prolonged strike. or depression of trade may make it impossible for the union to meet its engagement as regards sickness or superannuation. We shall find, however, that by recent legislation employers are now compelled to compensate workmen for accidents occurring in the course of their employment, and that the State has taken on to its. shoulders the duty of providing old age pensions; also that by the National Insurance Act which came into force on 15th July, 1912, the State, in conjunction with the employer and the workman himself, has secured sickpay, medical attendance, and other benefits for the worker during illness, whilst in some trades it also supports him during a period of unemployment. Furthermore, as Members of Parliament have since 1911 been paid asalary of £400 a year, the unions no longer have to bear the cost of maintaining their parliamentary representatives.

Thus the Trade Unions, having been largely relieved of many of their former burdens, are able to accumulate

larger funds for fighting purposes

"INDUSTRIAL WARFURE"

And now, if you have carefully road the preceding portion of this chapter, you will have realised that between masters and men there are plentiful opportunities for a conflict of interests. If the differences between employers and employed cannot be settled by friendly negotiation, either the men go out on strike, or the masters nines to employ them any longer and lock them out. A strike or a "lock out" is the last resert of either party, and until one or the other time of the struggle and gives way, business con es to a standstill wages cease, and the whole community begins to suffer 1 ormerly strikes were local in character (possibly between one single employer and his men) and in that case they affected only a small ares, but of late years the "collective strike" and the "sympathetic strike" have come into existence. In these cases a whole trade or a series of trades takes up the quartel of a single person, and in this manner we have seen the vist cotton industry paralysed because one employer declined to submit to the requirements of a traile union

Combinations of workmen have led to counter combinations of employers, and the "collective lock out is the weapon with which the latter propose to retainate against the collective strike. Up to the present the general "lock-out" has not been applied in this country to any large extent, but in Germun, where the employers have follented themselves much more closely than in the United Kingdom, the "general lock-out is used rigorously whenever the masters consider that the men have strick unrespondly. The collective strike, and the collective lock-out are—as you will readily believe—disaytrons to the whole nation, and it may be safely said that one of the most pressing medium of modern citizenship is to discover some less ruinous means of adjusting the relations between Capital and Labour. Capital requires Labour, and Labour is dependent on Capital. Each is essential to the other. Strikes and lock-outs are wasteful, destructive, and leave behind them much rancour and bad blood. Moreover, they inflict untold hardship upon other people—especially upon women and children quite outside the scope of the dispute. Every means of reconcillation between the parties should therefore be tried before resorting to these violent and disruptive methods.

CONCILIATION AND ARBITRATION

We will briefly examine what machinery the State provides for bringing the disputing parties together. In 1896 a Conciliation Act1 was passed, empowering the Board of Trade to take steps to promote a settlement in cases where a difference exists between employers and employed. They may appoint a Conciliator or a Board of Arbitration who shall endeavour to bring the disputing parties to a settlement. If both the disputants desire arbitration the Board of Trade will appoint an impartial and independent arbitrator. The Act has not been as effective as might be wished. Disputes are usually settled between powerful Boards of employers and employed, who conclude agreements setting forth the conditions under which masters and men purpose to work together for the future. But as these agreements have no binding force at law they are often broken. It has been suggested by many people that arbitration should be made compulsory in this country. In the interest of the whole nation it is urged that strikes should be made unlawful and prohibited, and that the questions in dispute should be referred to an independent tribunal, by whose award each party should be bound. But British trade unionists have so far doclined to give up the 'right to strike," and there is nothing in our laws as jet to prevent these industrial struggles being fought out to the bitter end

Wege Buends

In some few trades—particularly in these involving home labour—the wages are so writchedly low that the Government has been compelled to step in, and secure to the workers a more equitable scale of remuneration These trades are spoken of as the "sweated" industries, and comprise such occupations as paper-box incking, hand sewing for the tailoring trades, lace finishing, and cirtain binds of chain making in all of which the work is conducted by women in their own homes. Trade unions have not flourished among women workers, but this is only one of the many reisons why the wages in these trades have remained so scenty.

To amend a discreditable state of affairs the Legis lature in 1909 passed the Trade Boards Act, establishing and empowering Trade Boards to fix fair rates of wages in certain trades. If the Act is found to work successfully we may expect its provisions to be extended to other occupations, possibly next to that of the agricultural labourer. This measure affords an excellent example of the trind of much of our recent legislation.

^{1 9} Ed VII. c. 22.

EMPLOYERS' LIABILITY

Many occupations are attended with danger to the workers, and accidents are bound to occur from time to time. If such accidents could be proved to be due to the negligence of the employer, the injured workman was always able under the Common Law to recover compensation. But sometimes the accidents arose from circumstances quite outside the employers' control (as when a man slips and falls from a scaffold), or from the clumsiness or carelessness of some fellow workman; and in these cases the injured person could not recover any compensation for the damage he had sustained. Little by little public opinion has come round to the view that when a workman is injured in the course of his employment under any circumstances, he ought to receive some measure of compensation from his employer-in other words the employer must be made liable for injuries happening to his employees when engaged upon his work. A Statute placing this obligation upon the employer was passed in 1880,1 but as this Act required the workman to prove that the injury was occasioned by the fault or negligence of the employer or of his responsible assistants, it did not cover cases of "pure accident" or accidental injury from fellow labourers. In 1906 these deficiencies were remedied by the famous Workmen's Compensation Act 2 which may be regarded as the final development of the principle known as "Employers' Liability." By this Act an employer incurs responsibility for all accidents, as well as certain specified diseases happening to workmen engaged in the performance of his work. The compensation in case of disablement amounts practically to a weekly respment equal to half the average weekly wage carned by the workman during the proceeding twelve months. As you will at once realise, these requients may become a heavy charge upon employers, but by the beneficent principle of mutual insurance—of which you will soon make acquaintance when you enter business life——they are enabled to bear the very considerable burdens imposed upon them by the two Acts above named.

NATIONAL HEALTH INSULANCE

The worker may also be meapacitated from pursuing his duly labour by other causes than accident. He may fall Ill, or contract some serious disease like consumption Until recently the law made no provision against such misfortunes, and as soon as his small swings were exhausted, the working man (or woman) had no alternative except to go into the workhouse, or rely upon the charity of others for support By a notable Act of Parliamentthe National Insurance Act of 1911 1-provision is now made agrunst sickness and invalidity for all persons under the income tax limit of £160 per year, by compulsory ausurance, towards which il e State, the employer, and the workman all contribute. From the wages of men, 44 per week is deducted, and 3d per week from the wages of women. To these contributions the employer adds 3d per week for each employee, whilst the State adds the equivalent of 21 per person weekly. During sickness an allowance of 10s per week is paid to men, and is 6d per week to women for the first halfyear, and 5s to each for the remaining period of disablement. Free medical attendance is also provided. In case of total disablement a pension of 5s. a week is paid for life.

For the reception of consumptives special "fresh-air lospitals" called Sanatoria are being built as required, where board, lodging, and medical freedment are provided free of cost. It is hoped by these means to hulp to stainp but this devastating disease which carries off isns of thousands of the population annually. Other benefits which cannot be enumerated here are also provided by the Act. This great piece of social legislation also makes a beginning of insurance against unemployment—the chief terror of the worker. Unemployment benefit is afforded, as yet, to only a few trades, but it is probable that it will be ultimately extended to others.

Taken in conjunction with the Old Age Pensions Act(which provides that any person of British instignality over
70 years of age can claim a pension of 5s. a week it his
or her income is less than 10s. a week), you will recognise that the State is doing much to remove from the
life of the wage-carners those crushing anxieties which
accompany illness, unemployment, and lack of recourses
in old age. The cost to the country is enormous—many
millions of pounds per annum—but it is believed and
hoped that the increased happiness of the people, and the
increased efficiency of the workers, will more than compensate for the additional burden placed by these laws
upon the taxpayer.

When you remember also the extraordinary development of the Factory Acts (which have brought about as great an improvement in the lot of the adult workers as in that of the children) and the protection afforded by the Employers' Liability and Workmen's Compensation Acts. you will at least agree that during the last half century, the State cannot be charged with neglect of the interests of the labouring classes

FURTHER PROPERTY

Much still remains to be done and the citizens of the future will have planty of problems upon which to exercise that best powers of thought and statesmanding. It is very well and I'm per to insure the worker against unemployment but it would be far better to strike at the root of the matter and as far as possible in vent unemployment. He Labour Frebanges which were established in 1909 under the Labour Frebanges Act, and which ends arour to bring worker and work together, are a step in the right direction, but they do not solve the problem of unemployment, the causes of which his deep and hidden in the structure of medern industrial life.

Nor is it possible to remain satisfic! with conditions which permit so much potenty to exist side by side with excessive wealth. Nobody wishes to assist this incorrigible idlers or the "work-dip". They deserve their poverty. Ultimately they will have to be removed from society and put away into "Noor colonies" where they will be obliged to work or starve. But, that a min should toil long and hard at work which the community requires to be done, and yet to unable to keep himself and his family above the efficiency line, is indefentible. Some impetious people in their haste to mend social conditions, advocate a catastrophic unitinity of the whole fabric of society, and would smetton acts of violence to attain their

case of total disablement a pension of 5s. a week is paid for life.

For the reception of consumptives special "fresh-air hospitals" called Samatoria are being built as required, where board, lodging, and medical treatment are provided free of cost. It is hoped by these means to help to stamp out this devastating disease which carries off tens of thousands of the population annually. Other benefits which cannot be enumerated here are also provided by the Act. This great piece of social legislation also makes a beginning of insurance against unemployment—the chief terror of the worker. Unemployment benefit is afforded, as yet, to only a few trades, but it is probable that it will be ultimately extended to others.

Taken in conjunction with the Old Age Pensions Act¹ (which provides that any person of British nationality over 70 years of age can claim a pension of 5s. a week if his or her income is less than 10s. a week), you will recognise that the State is doing much to remove from the life of the wage-carners those crushing anxieties which accompany illness, unemployment, and lack of resources in old age. The cost to the country is enormous—many millions of pounds per annum—but it is believed and hoped that the increased happiness of the people, and the increased efficiency of the workers, will more than compensate for the additional burden placed by these laws upon the taxpayer.

When you remember also the extraordinary development of the Factory Acts (which have brought about as great an improvement in the lot of the adult workers as in that of the children) and the protection afforded by the Employers Liability and Workmen's Compensation Acts, you will at least agree that during the last half-century, the State cannot be charged with neglect of the interests of the labouring classes

PLITHER PROFIEMS

Much still remains to be done and the citizens of the future will have pleute of problems upon which to exceeds that best powers of thought and satesminship. It is very well and project to insure the worker against maniples much but it would be be better to strike at the root of the matter and as far as possible prevent unemployment. The Labour I vehanges which note established in 1999 under the Labour Fachanges Act, and which endeavour to bring worker and work together, are a step in the right direction, but they do not solve the problem of unemployment, the causes of which lied deep and hidden in the structure of modern industrial life.

Nor is it possible to remain stricked with conditions which permit so much poverty to exist aide by side with excessive wealth. Nobody wishes to assist the incorrigit to idless or the "work-shy". They discrete their poverty Ultimately they will have to be removed from society and put away into "labour colonies" where they will be cligied to work or starve. But, that a man should tool long and hard at work which the community requires to be done, and yet be unable to keep himself and his family above the efficiency line is indefinable. Some impelious people, in their laste to me had social conditions, advicate a citastrophic pubic and of the whole fabric of society, and would strettlin acts of violence to sitain their

222 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

end. And this brings us to a brief consideration of the dectrines of

SOCIALISM. COLLECTIVE OWNERSHIP

There is no term so much abused and so vaguely used as the word "Socialism." It is applied indiscriminately to every form of political belief; to that of the wild fanation who would reconstruct the State by the aid of dynamite to that of the communists, or collectivists, who would start the world afresh by dividing up property equally among all; to the modest aspirations of those who would like to see the Municipalities undertake the provision o pure milk; and to the unselfish creed of the slum-worker who believes that by devoted personal effort alone car society be saved. Socialism varies in various countries In France it is largely identified with the revolutionary and anarchical programme of "Syndicalism," whereas in Germany the Socialists—though far outnumbering any other political party-are so divided amongst themselves that it is difficult to know exactly what they want Socialism in Germany appears, in fact, to comprise a number of highly theoretical and frequently incompatible doctrines. "Challenged," says Mr. W. Harbutt Dawson in his informing work "The Evolution of Modern Germany," "to affirm a positive State policy, it takes refugo in phrases, or flatly denies the obligation to contemplate the practical realisation of its theories." In another passage this well-known writer remarks that "of all futile spectacles offered by German political life, none is so strange or tragic as that of a huge party numbering now 34 million adults, engaged year after year, and decade after decade, in the vain task of beating the air."

Socialism in Eugland is neither so revolutionary in its

aims as in France, nor quite so theoretic as in Germany The love of lay end order ingrained in the Englishmana nature and his practical character assert themselves over among those who openly avow themselves to be alwaneed socialists. Of course we have in Fuglant also a section who advocate force as a remely for social ills but their number is small and their leaders incompanious for intelligence or altity. The vast majority of English socialists desire to attain their ends by constitutional mains.

And what is it that socialists everywhere want to arrive at? As far as one can discern any common ends, they all want to abelish private property in land mines railways, canals factories shops et in fact they object to private ownership of any of the many forms of production distribution and exchange of wealth. They would nationalise all these things that is the, would make the State the universal landlord owner and employer No one should work more than eight hours a day and to every worker should be guaranteed a minimum ware. The amassing of fortunes would be rendered impossible and everybody would be pensioned off comfortally if disabled or mon attaining a moderate old age. These are as 1 rox1 mately the ideals of the thorough going socialists and they assure us that if the State were the universal omiloyer and landlord we should no longer be troubled with labour disputes and strikes but that everyone would be easer to work for the common , and

You must judge for yourself whether the socialist aim is within practical reach or, if attained whether general contentment would be the result and whether it auftentially takes into account the ordinary metrics of human section. What guarantee have we for instance that strikes for higher wages would not occur in a cocalist

community? The socialists declars that we have already gone a long way in their direction, and point to the ownership and successful management by the State of the Post Office, and ask why this principle should not be extended into other spheres; why, for instance, the State should not buy up and manage the railways and mines? They point also to municipal trading, and show that many Town Councils own the gas and waterworks, and the tramway systems within their administrative areas, and that the profits go for the benefit of the community in some form or another. Why, ask the socialists, should the Councils stop at trams, gas and water? Why not have municipal farms for the supply of pure milk, and municipal stores for the sale of unadulterated goods at the lowest possible prices, and municipal collieries to supply coal without any midddleman's profit? On the other hand, "individualists" altogether object to the Councils going into business and taking up work which might be done in the way of business by private persons or companies for their own profit. They urge, with some degree of truth, that publicly-owned business concerns. are seldom economically managed.

These, and such as these, are questions which you will find hotly debated nowadays between men of divergent political views. In this little book we can only place the subject before you. You must use your reasoning powers and dismiss your preconceived prejudices when you come to examine these most difficult problems of

20th-century citizenship.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

I. Contrast the ancient Trade Guilds with the modern Trade Unions, and see wherein they differ in their objects.

- 2 Name 3 great strikes of recent years, giving the cause of each and the results attained
- 3 In connection with trade unions what is meant by (a) peaceful picketing, (b) strike brisking, (c) a blackleg, (d) maling ring, (c) recognition of a trade union?

4 The "track system" is now abolished. What was this system?

5 Discuss the effect of unrestricted international comp tition. Can you suggest any practical means of restricting such competition?

6 Should strikes be made unlawful, and arbitration

compulsory?

7 Afforestation reclamation of fore-aboves, small holdings, emigration are all recommended as a means of reducing the amount of unemployment. Discuss each of these proposals

8 Imagine a Socialist State where no industry was conducted for private profit. How would you provide in such a community any incentive to commercial progress, and how would you reward a man who made some commercially valuable discovery in (sar) wireless telephony!

9 Can you explain why many socialists object to copartners and profit sharing schemes between Vasters and Mon!

10 Co-operative Stores (se distributive agencies) among working men have proved very successful, but co-operative lactories (productive agencies) rarely so Can you assign any manon for this lack of surcess in co-operative production f

11 Discuss the value of Relief Works in times of uncomforment

CHAPTER XVII

ENGLAND AND THE EMPIRE

THE WHITE MAN'S BURDEN

You have, no doubt, learnt in your geography lessons many interesting facts about the widely-scattered territories known collectively as the British Empire. You have probably scanned the map of the world and observed those parts of it coloured red, and have been told thatthese portions belong to Great Britain, and that they comprise altogether about one-sixth of the land surface of the globe. You have read, too, in your histories of the founding of our Colonial Empire by bold adventurers like the Cabots, Humphrey Gilbert, Drake, Raleigh, Hawkins, Ocok, and others; how they sailed away from these shores and planted the British Flag in distant parts of the world, and how, without any definite or premeditated plan, they added bit by bit to the nation's possessions. You have doubtless delighted in tales of fights for the flag, in recitals of deeds that won the empire, and of many a brave and noble act done for its sake on land and sea, in war and peace; and your heart has been stirred by these glorious records of our rough island's story, and you have felt proud of your birthright-of being born of British blood. It is good to feel the glow of patriotic pride, and to rejoice in the fact that you spring from a race owning such high traditions.

But patriotism is more than waving the flag and singing songs on Empire Day Self-glorification is ignelle Great Empires have existed in the drys of long ago have decayed and have disappeared. Let us therefore examine for a few moments some of the problems affecting the constitute n and well being of the British Empire, and lack correctes whether it too its destined to decline and fall like those of the part or whether it is found, if upon a more sold and enduring basis.

Do not forget that six sevenths of the four hundred million people who one allegiance to the British Crown are alien to us in blood lan uage and colour and that we hold the Impire for them as much and even more than for convictes. We must guard against the view that the coloured races are born and exist only to be ruled over by whites. That used to be the general belief. Ideas of universal brotherhood and the dectrine that the black man has a claim to equal rights with the white man are of quite modern growth. The abolition of slavery throughout the British Empire took place within the memory of many people still living, whilst the emancipation of the slaves in America has within the lifetime of the author of this book. Public of muon has undergone a complete change. We now hold that it estimated of the white man towards the less experienced and less educated races should be that of friend, adviser and teacher, rather than that of lord and master.

That Vight is hight is no longer the accepted rule. Duty has become our watchword. Livery right has its corresponding duty and areco we claim rights over so large a portion of the earth's surface we mean duties correspondingly great. This is what is meant by "the white man a burden. Since we have had laid upon our shoulders the task of governing so many races in so many

lands; we must see to it that that task is worthily fulfilled; that these who look to us for guidance shall be educated and trained so that in due time they may learn the art of self-government; that the laws under which they live shall be humane, and shall favour no man abovehis neighbour; that taxes shall not be oppressive, and shall weigh least heavily upon the humble classes; that, justice shall be administered fairly between rich and poor, and between black and white; and that freedom of person, of speech, and of thought shall be the right of all so long as they keep within the wide bounds of the law. We have tried to put these principles of government in. force in every portion of the Empire-wherever, in fact, the Union Jack is flown-and in this respect the British Empire differs from all the Empires of antiquity. The Roman Empire adopted another attitude towards the nations whom it subdued. The conquered princes were taken captives to Rome to grace the Victor's triumph. The subjugated peoples were not trained to govern themselves; they were overawed by the military, and often reduced to slavery and exploited for the enrichment of their masters. Both Greeks and Romans were highly civilised peoples, yet they saw nothing wrong in this procedure. Not until the 19th century-as we have already learnt-did our own Empire rid itself of the odious charge of countenancing slavery. You who have been reared in a free country, and who look upon such elementary rights as above described as your natural birthright, can hardly realise how slowly they were won for you by your forefathers, and how much they mean to people still groaning under despotic and arbitrary rule.

The lesson, therefore, that the history of the bygone ages teaches us is, that our vast Empire is not merely a priceless heritage, but a trust for which we are one and

all responsible, and that unless we discharge this trust well and faithfully at too must decline and fall like those that have gone before it

Each of you when you attain to manhood can influence. the destiny of the Empire through your vote. It is the part, therefore of a good citizen to project his vision beyond the affairs of the parish or town in which he lives and to take a broad view of the vast tield in which our fullow countrymen and fellow subjects are working. Fur in whitever part of the Empire we dwell whether we are Finglishmen, Scotsmen, Irishmen, Canadiana, Australians, New Jealanders, South Africans, or natives of India, whether white or coloured we are all British subjects, and the welfare of each affects the welfare of all Discontent, injustice, oppression wir fimine, discuse and distress, cannot exist in one part without their effects being felt elsewhere. In the same way if any portion of the Empire is enjoying prosperity the beneficent influence of that prosperity is felt far and wide for fatter or worse we are united together as members of one body. If you think still deeper you will discover that this solidarity of mankind exists among nations just as much as between the various portions of the Impire When this is universally recognised a new era will dawn It will then be seen that devastating war is the worst possible way of scitling international disputes

THE DOMENIOUS EFFOUND THE SEAS

Some parts of our I mpire have grown up into manhood, and are too big and powerful to be called any longer by their early name of "colony." From sparcely people lated settlements they have developed into great nations, and are now autonomous—that is to say, they govern themselves. They have their own Parliaments, their own courts and judges, their own educational systems, and they are now setting up schemes for their own defence in order to relieve the Motherland of the duty of protecting them from possible invasion. Indeed, as you have doubtless read in the newspapers, some of the Dominions are already contributing to the cost of the Imperial Navy to which we entrust the task of guarding the ceean-paths between the various parts of the Empire.

The Dominion of Canada, the Commonwealth of Australia, the Dominion of New Zealand, and the Union of South Africa are the most important of the Dominions beyond the Seas. From your histories and geographies you will learn the story of their discovery, colonisation, position, area, climate and products; but there are certain other matters which perhaps you will not find in your books, and to these we will address ourselves for a few moments.

CANADA

Have you ever considered the effect of Climate upon the development of a country, and upon the character of its inhabitants? If not, you will soon see that the future of the great Dominions is bound to be greatly influenced by their climatic conditions. In Canada, for instance, the winter is long and severe, with the result-that negroes do not care to settle there. Canada is thus free from the "black problem" which besets the future of the United States. There is no great difficulty in preserving Canada as a "white man's country." Neither da the South European races emigrate largely to Canada. They, too, do not enjoy its rigorous winter. Canada is thus relieved by Nature of two very undesirable elements

which seriously affect the social development of her southern neighbour

Again, the Canadian winter, bright and enjoyable as it is, does not favour the growth of weak and understabled children. We may, therefore expect in the control of a few generations to find Canads inhighted by a strong timle race of white men who will exercise a profound influence upon the destiny not only of the Pripare but of the whole world. We must repote that a country so full of promise is also deeply attached to the Motherlan Ly ties of blood affection and common institutions.

AUSTRALIA

Now let us turn to the southern hemisphere. In Australia the climate ranges from that of the torrid to that of the temperate zone and thus the preservation of the Commonwealth as a white man's country presents difficulties hardly known in Canada Until recently if e sugar plantations of Queensland were largely worked by black labour-Kanakas from Polynesia. But the feeling runs strongly in Australia against the presence of black people A "white Australia" is their cry, with the result that laws were passed a few years ago against the employment of black labour and the Kanakas were deported and repatriated Since the 31st December, 1906 thick men have been practically probabited from entering Australia. To compensate the sugar growers for the loss of their labourers a heavy bounty was given by the State Government upon all sugar produced to white labour The work of cultivating the caue under a tropical sun appears, however, to be untit for white men, and the production of sugar soems to have diminished since the departure of the blacks

Australia consists, as you probably know, of six self-governing States—New South Wales, Victoria, Queensland, South Australia and Northern Territory, Western Australia and Tasmania—which have bound themselves into a Federal Commonwealth under the Crown of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland. The Activical Which brought about this great Federation came into force on the 1st January, 1901.

Long before the Federation, however, the several States of Australia had regarded it as desirable to impose certain restrictions upon the influx of Asiatics, particularly Chinese, who were attracted in great numbers to the gold fields where their characteristic industry reaped a rich reward. Increasing anxiety to preserve Australia for the white man has led the Commonwealth Government to legislate against the further introduction of Asiatics, and it is now very difficult for a yellow man to obtain admission to Australia. Thus, you see, that the strong arm of the law has been invoked by Australians to do for their country what the climate so largely does for Canada. Australia, however, welcomes Europeans, and invites them to fill the big empty spaces of the Continent. She particularly desires to find inhabitants for the great Northern Territory surrounding the Gulf of Carpentaria, which, as you will see from the map, lies within the tropics. Much of this region is very fertile and fit for colonisation, but whether white men can live there permanently is a question which time alone can determine. At all events, Australia is resolute in withholding it from settlement by the black or yellow races; though, doubtless, by the introduction of Kanakas and Asiatics its vast natural resources would be more quickly developed.

NEW ZEALAND

The Dominion of New /caland seems to stand happily outside the troubles arising from racial differences. Her isolated position remote from the immediate proximity of black or yellow racia, her climate which resembles that of lingland and her pastord industries which appear to affed little of principal for the employment of coloured labour have doubtless saved New Zalan I from some of the problems which have perplexed Australia. A large measure of prosperity attends the industrial activity of the Dominion which renders it an attractive home for the numerous congrants from these shores, who are prepared to make the king copage to this most distant of our coloural possessions.

SOUTH AFFICA

It is as yet too soon to speak confidently of the future of the four South African colories—The Cape, Natal, The Transval, and the Oringe Free State—which by an Act of Parliament, in 1909 bound thinselves together into the Union of South Africa. Less than ten years after the tirree war between liver and Briton, which rent South Africa asunder, and cost the lives of tens of thousands of brive men, the hostile states were federated into a Union which—it is hoped—will establish a settled form of Government acceptable to both races. The Seat of Government is at Pretoria, and the Parliament sits at Cate Town

The difficulties before the new Union are many and great, eg the language problem—whether Dutch or linglish shall be the official language, and which shall

predominate in the schools frequented by Boer children; the question whether the black population shall have political and other rights equal to those enjoyed by the whites, etc. There are many other problems, too complex to deal with here, which will require suptome tact and skill in their handling by South African statesmen. We shall all, therefore, watch the progress of the roung Federation with auxious hope. It is a good augury that the Union chose as its first Premier Mr. Louis Boths, whe had fought valiantly in the Boer war of 1899-1902 against the British troops. When the strife closed Boths wur the respect and admiration of his former adversaries by his streunous endeavours to make the peace effective and permanent, by joining all the colonies—Boer and British—under one united government.

The Cape is of immense strategic value, as in time of war it might very well happen that our only route to India lay round the south of Africa. A charge of dynamite might block the Suez Canal, and were South Africa in hostile hands our path to India might be completely barred. The completion of the Panuma Canal, which is to be opened to warships of all nations, would afford an alternative, but much longer route.

INDIA

The gradual steps by which British rule has been extended over India until now it practically covers the whole of the great peniusule, is one of the most fascinating stories in world history; a story with which, as good citizens, you should acquaint yourselves. You would no regard, a workman very highly who was ignorant or clumsy in the use of the tools of his trade; and it is equally true that a man cannot be regarded as an efficient

citizen if he is ignorant of the history of the Empire under which he lives, and in which he is required to exercise the rights of citizenship. Make it your duty, therefore, as you go through life to "sindwith some senious reading of history and geography between the books you read for micro recreation. You will be amply rewarded. There are true stories in the history of Ludice of Canada, of Australia, of South Africa, and indeed of all portions of our Limpire, which are just as it rilling as any romance you have ever read. Moreover, you will find a great pleasure in being better able to understand the difficult imperial questions with which the Government of the day is constantly confronted. In the control of the destines of India and of the Colonial Empire we should be neither Liberals nor Conservatives, but should guide our steps by the light of history, and by what we believe, after careful thought, to be right, just, and true. Our terratorial interests in India dato from the found

dation in 1600 of the East India Company, which was formed to carry on trading operations in the East | From the footbold first secured at Surat, by this famous Company, our influence has steadily aprend until when in 1911 the King Emperor George and the Queen I mura-s Mary held their grand court or Durbar at Della, and received the homage of many native princes, British rule extended over a country of more than one and a helf taillion square males, containing a population of more than 300,000,000 inhabitants, made up of a hist of distinct nations and tribes speaking over 140 different languages. It is because of the differences of race, language, religion, and caste, that it becomes possible for a were handful of white mon to govern the vast dependency There is only one white soldier in India to 12 000 natives The merease of our power in India during the ras-

286 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

300 years has not been the result of mere greed of territory. It is always difficult for any European nation to occupy even a small portion of the country of a less civilised community without extending its sphere of influence. Thus, for instance, attacks are made upon the trading settlements by warlike tribes which must be repulsed: trade routes are subject to interruption by bands of robbers and must be guarded and kept open; friendly tribes are barried by some enemy, and look to the European settlers for assistance against the common foe; frontier disputes arise which can only be ended by the appropriation of new territory; traders and missionaries push forward into dangerous and unsettled regions, and are perhaps massacred, whereupon the murderers must, if possible, be caught and punished, and failing that, the whole district must be taught a severe lesson. These are the usual incidents which every great trading nation experiences when extending its commerce into uncivilised lands. English and French traders have always been noted for the persistence with which they have forced themselves into wild and inhospitable regions; and we have over and over again in the story of our colonial development been obliged to assume the responsibility of governing some outlying territory, not only for the protection of the traders, but also for the defence of friendly natives against their hereditary enemies. As an illustration of this process read the story of James Brooke, Rajah of Sarawak in Borneo. In similar manner we were led not very long. ago to annex Upper Burmah ; whilst the repeated extension of the N.W. frontier of India is another example of annexation necessitated by the presence in that region of many wild and aggressive mountain tribes.

BLITISH RULF JUSTIFIED

The King of Great Britain and Incland is Emperor of India, but as a constitutional Sovereign be can only act in that capacity through a Minister-the Secretary of State for India, who is always a member of the Cabinet The Secretary for India is assisted by a Council of fiftien members, all of whom must have some knowledge of and experience in Indian affairs. The Indian Budget (enp 21) is brought into the English House of Commons every year and submitted for its approval, but the Indean Revenue is never used for the enrichment of the Fuglish nation, nor does the King as Emperor of India receive any addition to his income from that country The money rused from the people of India is expended in India upon the cost of its own Government, Army, Civil Service, Public Education Radinays, Irrigation Schemes, etc. Grants for Education are made out of the Indian revenue on much the same principle as in Fugiand. You may remember that at the Delhi Durlar the King-Fuperor proclaimed that these grants would be forthwith increased by the sum of £333,000. It must not be forgotten also that vast sums are voluntarily sent out by the various churches in this country to establish and support mission schools, medical and other missionarius. and denominational institutions of various linds in all parts of In ha Britons are justly proud of their Indian I many acts of herousin and of the display of many of the best virtues of the British character In India we have been able to show how we may rule over mees quite incapable of selfgovernment, with justice, wisdom, and magnanuatty If our controlling hand were removed, the country would at

238 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

once be torn from end to end by interneoine war. The various sects are very hostile towards each other. Under British supremacy peace is maintained, and public works -railways, irrigation schemes, etc. are carried out for the benefit of all. Suggestions that we should retire from India and allow the country to rule itself betray a complete ignorance of history, as well as of the conditions which exist in the great peninsula. Representative government, of which you have read in Chapter IV., is not familiar to the Oriental mind; nor do Eastern nations seem able to appreciate it. They prefer a benevolent autocracy (see p. 2). Do not, therefore, be led away by ignorant statements that India suffers, because we do not at once establish representative institutions there. and leave the country to manage its own affairs. That may come eventually, but the time is not yet. The masses in India would not know what to do with a vote even if they had one. Ninety per cent. of the population can neither read nor write, in spite of all the schools that have been established. Meanwhile, educated Indians are freely appointed to high office under the Government, to positions of command in the Indian Army, to seats on the Judicial Bench, etc. Even so far back as 1833 it was made law by an Act for the better government of India,1 that " no native shall by reason only of his religion, place of birth, descent, colour, be disabled from holding any place, office, or employment." We have every reason to be proud of the British "raj" or rule in India. Mistakes, of course, have been made. But England has given, and is still giving numbers of her best men, and her best thought and endeavour, to promote the welfare and happiness of India's teeming millions. The highest tributes have been repeatedly paid to our rule in that

country by the greatest French, German and American authorities. Let us, therefore, take encouragement from these works of commendation, and persevere in our work in India, confident that we shall add still further to the lastro of thus brightest jowel of the British Crown

EGYPT

The Butish occupation of Egypt—the land of the Pharachs—belongs to very modern history

It is too long a story to tell here in detail, and you must consult such a work as Lord Cromer's "Modern Lypt' if you wish to know how it came about that on July 11th, 1982, the British gunboats bombarded Alexandria and subsequently entered the country to quell the frightfal desorder into which it had fallen You will learn in those volumes how it became impossible for our troops to quit the country so long as the warlike dervishes were able to come down from the Soudan and harry the defence less fellaheen or peasants of Egypt. No more dramatic story exists than that of the attempt made by General Gordon to deal single handed with the Mahdi the prophetleader of the dervishes, who was looked upon by them as of divine origin. You all have heard of Gordon's fate -bow he was shut up in Khartonm, and how the Frpedi tion organised for his relief arrived just too late to rescue him. He had been murdered by the fanatics on January 26th, 1885, two days before the Relief Lxpelition, after encountering infinite difficulties, came in sight of the beleaguered town. It became necessary thereafter to reconquer the Sondan, and to do this an faryption Army was trained by Lord Kitchener, who gained a decisive victory over some 50 000 dervishes at Omdurman near Khartoum on September 2nd, 1893

The progress of Egypt since the re-conquest of the Soudan has been remarkable. The whole country has been settled. A railway has been carried to Khartoum, and a college for the education of the natives has been erected near the spot where Gordon fell.

The British occupation of Egypt has done for the Egyptians what they had proved quite incapable of doing for themselves. Taxes have been reduced and equalised, and the peasants are no longer subject to unjust and crushing imposts; industries have been established, and both sugar and cotton are now grown with great success; the fellaheen are becoming prosperous to a degree never known before; a balance to the good in the country's accounts now takes the place of the deficit which regularly occurred under the old rule; huge dams have been thrown across the Nile to preserve the waters for irrigating the land in that rainless country; canals have been cut to carry the water to the fields, with the result that the crops are now secure against any possible failure of the annual overflow of the Nile. The Law Courts and the Criminal Law have been reformed, and the prisons in which captives once lived for months like wild beasts have been wholly reorganised; the purchase of slaves has been made a criminal offence; good hospitals, asylums, and schools (for girls as well as boys) have been established; the water supply to the towns improved; railway and postal facilities extended, and many other benefits, too numerous to mention, secured for the country.

The future of Egypt still remains a problem of the Empire. Lord Cromer, who as Consul-General in Egypt, more than any other man was responsible for the introduction of good government into that land, believes that Egypt must eventually either become autonomous (i.e. solf-governing) or must be incorporated into the British

Empire! He himself kopes that in time the Legitians may bear the art of religouernment and manage their affairs for the benefit of the whole country. Unfortunitely, however, the Lyptian too often places his own personal interests before his duty. He is apt to look upon office as a means of providing him with a good salary and an easy life, rather than with opperunities of devoted and dismiteracted work for his fillows. The Flyptian personals are among the most industrieus people in the world, but the upper classes are among the most lithragic and action of landing over the present excellent management of Flyptian abars to native rulers is not, therefore, as simple as might at first be imagined.

Crown Colonies, etc.

It would sayour too much of a goography leason were we to traverse the Impure and deal even in the briefist manner with each portion. If you have grasped something of the nature of the difficult problems that present themselves in India and in the great Dominions beyond the Sens, you will be prepared for the smaller yet still important questions which are constantly arrang in connection with one or other of the numerous territories comprised in the British Empire.

The West Indies and other Crown Colonies (recolonies not yet endowed with responsible government, but ruled by a Gorenner appointed by the Crown) furnish their own set of problems, whilst the vart Protectorites like likehuanaland Nyassaland, Uganda, etc., over which we exercise an undefined authority, all make calls upon the attention of the Secretary of State for the Coloniex. You can rarely take up the newspapers without reading of some matter with which the Colonial Office has to deal. At one time it may be the investigations into the sleeping sickness in Uganda; at another the measures for alleviating the distress caused by an earthquake or tidal wave in the West Indies; or it may be some difficult question of colonial finance. Thus you see that the oversight of the Crown Colonies and other portions of the Empire which have not received full powers of selfgovernment, throws a heavy burden upon the Colonial Office, and upon the Minister responsible to Parliament for its work. The management of so great an Empire is indeed a Titan's task, and of course there are occasions upon which the interests of its various parts come into conflict. For the purpose of discussing colonial matters. and in particular the all-important subject of the Defence of the Empire, there has developed in recent years an excellent practice of inviting the leading statesmen of the great Dominions beyond the Seas to meet His Majesty's Ministers in order to confer upon questions which affect the Empire as a whole.

IMPERIAL CONFERENCES

The first of the Colonial Conferences, as they were then called, met in 1887, the year of Queen Victoria's Jubilee. It discussed imperial telegraphs and posts, and suggestions were made as to binding the various parts of the Empire more closely together by means of tariffs. We will speak of these in a moment.

In 1894 the second of these Conferences was held...
It met at Ottawa. In 1897 and 1992 still other Conferences were held. In 1997 the meeting assumed the title of the "Imperial" Conference, and held an interesting discussion upon Imperial Defence which has led to

important results. The same subject was further devolope in the Conference of 1911 which was probably the most important of all these meetings. It is now safe to say that the great Dominious have accepted the principle that they must take their share in the dience of the Impure No common line of act in has as set been a lopted. Yen will however match with the kinnest interest these manifestations of the unity and soli larity of the Empire. Such preparations have no action save meaning but are designed solols to mainly in the uninterrupted flow of trade and emmerce between the various parts of the Empire and thereby to consure the peace and prespective of the which well.

But you cannot expect the Oversets Dominions to rest content with mere outrillations of money or rlips or men. They very properly daim some some in the control of Imperial affairs. You may be sure that at future Conferences—which are now hell every four years—the question will be raised of the possibility of developing the Imperial Conference into a Parliament of the Empire. It would lead us too far to discuss this very interesting and momentous proposal in these proper The audject bristles with difficulties some of which you usy, perhaps think out for yourself.

COMMITTER OF IMPREIAL DEFENCE

Meanwhile you may remember that in 1909 a Committee of Imperial Def new was formed for the parpose of inaugumting a system of co-operation in inditars and mind defence between the a veral states of the Finjere Its constitution is flexible and at prevent comprises must first layers as Ministers together with the Mends of the Army and Navy Its functions are purely advisory by

its task is one of increasing importance. It is generally anticipated that this Committee may be the body upon which the Overseas Dominions will be represented and that it may solve the problem of the participation of the distant portions of the Empire in organising the means of Imperial Defence.

IMPERIAL PREFERENCE

Many politicians have advocated a system of imperialtariffs as a means of knitting the Empire in still closer bonds. Briefly they propose to introduce in this Country a system of import duties, but to allow goods from our Colonies to enter free of tax, or with a smaller tax than would have to be paid by foreigners. Whilst thus the tariff-reformers propose to give a "preference" to imports from the Colonies, the self-ruling Colonies are to be asked to give us similar preferential treatment. This in theory would mean that we should admit Canadian and Australian wheat and meat free of duty, but impose a small tax upon food coming from Russia, the Argentine, or anywhere outside the Empire. This question of taxing food from foreign sources has aroused much contention. It is believed by many that the tax would make food dearer, and would thus lessen the purchasing power of the wages of the labouring classes. The whole subject is too complicated and too controversial to be discussed here. Free Trade, Protection, and Imperial Preference are political questions to which you must hereafter devote your best powers of thought. The most solid and enduring tiebetween ourselves and the Dominions undoubtedly rests. upon community of sentiment and of ideals. Whether any scheme of preferential tariffs would strengthen these. ties is a matter for careful consideration. Already both

Canada and Australia, out of friendship and with a laudable desire to benefit the Motherland have given to the manufactures of this country a certain measure of piefirence—that is they impose upon them a lower scale of duties than upon the products of (say) Germany and America—But they do not admit, and have no intention of admitting British goods free. They are determined to "protect their own industries. It is to be remembered also that both these great Dominions have expressed their reluctance to enter into any scheme of tariffs which would lay upon the working classes of this country a beavier load of taxation than they already bear. With these trin ciples before you it will be your duty when you assume the responsibilities of citizenship, to decide for yourself how far a scheme of tartills can be devised to protect the trade interests of the Empire, as well as to promote the well being of all its component parts. You must not shut your eyes to the fact that the greater proportion of British experts to to countries outside the Empire, and that these nations might be tempted to retaliate if we placed barriers in the way of their trade with us.

EMERATION AND IMMORATION

One other point we must notice before closing this chapter. You have heard, no doubt, about the large numbers of people who leave this country each year to actile in the colonies or in foreign lands. The Colonial Office has a most useful Emigration Department and at 31, Breadway, S.W., intending emigrants can obtain information about the places where they may wish to go, and the cost and best way of getting there.

It is saddening, however, to think that a population, equal to that of a large town, emigrates annually from

246 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

Great Britain and Ireland to seek better conditions of life in other lands. It is true that about four-fifths of these men and women find a new home in one or other of the British Possessions. And, no doubt, were we not essentially a colonising people we should nover have heard of the British Empire. But it has now become a question of whether we can stand so great a drain of the best blood, bone, and sinew of the nation without suffering from its loss. The colonies desire only the youngest. strongest and healthiest, and refuse admittance to immigrants of weakly or diseased constitution. The aged, the feeble-bodied and feeble-minded are not wanted. This opens up a matter of the deepest concern. Many of our best citizens are being taken, and the worst are left behind on our hands. Whole districts in Scotland are being depleted of a sturdy peasantry whom it should be our endeavour to keep on the land. It can hardly be deemed wise that deer forests should be allowed to rise where men once tilled the soil; or that the interests of sport should supplant those of husbandry. Great Britain is not over-populated; indeed, Mr. Seebohm Rowntree -a great authority-states 1 "that there is room on Britain's land for 3,000,000 more workers than it at present supports." If this be so you can at once recognise the importance of developing our home agricultural industries, and preventing the emigration of so many excellent and hardworking citizens. Moreover, our food supply would be vastly increased were the soil more intensively cultivated.

This subject of emigration—its advantages and disadvantages—is one towards which you may profitably direct your thoughts. Like all questions it has two sides, and you must strive to discover which side offers

the grettest benefit to the Motherland. Canada and Australia are glad to 110 as many healthy and industrying men and women as we can send thim. I ut can we spare them? That is a quistun which must be asked and answered. If we decide that we ought to keep as many capable people in it a country as pessible then we must legislate so as to spen up the land for closer settle ment—a course of action which will are use strong feeling, and much sharp controversy. I at the bulk of the land in this country is held by a comparatively small number of opens.

Whilst hundreds of thousands of our fellow-countrymen are annually quitting their fatherland, there is on the other hand, a conciderable influx of foreign immigrants who, under stress of poverty or the unjust trust ment which they experience in their native lands make their way here to enjoy the freedom of person speech, and action which is depict to them in the countries from which they come I or centuries I ngland has offered a home to the oppressed of all nations - Under our flag they have found freedom of creed, worship and political belief, and we have well omed them cordially and given them the protection of our laws and the privilege of British citizenship. We have even felt proud that Great britain was regarded by all nations as an asyluin for offenders whose only crune was that they had protested too loudly against the harsh or unjust laws of their own country

But of lits years another class of immigrant has invaded our shores, people who are thoroughly unsatis fuctory—who have perhaps been expelled from their own (and perhaps also from other countries) as undesirable citized, or who have committed some crime and lawe contrived to escape to this country in order to hids themselves in London. Sconer or later they resume their oriminal practices hore, with the result that a very large number of offences dealt with in the London Police Courts have been committed by aliens of a vicious and degraded type.

In addition to these immigrants of criminal tendencies there is an inflow of many thousands per annum of people -chiefly of Polish or Russian origin and many of them Jews-whose habits and standard of living are repugnant to British ideas. They are practically without education, and without any of those attributes which might recommend them as a desirable addition to the ranks of British citizenship. They have never known what freedom means, and patriotism is a mere name on their lips. If any other country offered them a more agreeable asylum, they would leave England as readily as they entered it. Separated by language, race, religion, thought and customs, from their neighbours, they draw together into almost distinct communities; especially in the East of London, and in some of the larger provincial towns, where whole districts have assumed the aspect of a foreign city.

toreign city.

These aliens stand outside our civic life, and show little tendency to intermarry and become absorbed into the British race. Indeed, such fusion is not very desirable, as the resulting strain is less capable than the Anglo-Saxon of bearing the weight of Empire. Servile by descent and instinct, unskilled in any of the industrial arts, useless in time of war, a burden upon the ratepayers in times of peace, they add nothing to the social, economic, political, naval, or military strength of the country of their adoption, and therefore present a difficult problem for British statesmanship.

Unaccustomed to free and representative institutions,

after five years in this country they may and often do become "naturalised" (i.e. they obtain the full rights of entirenship) before they have learnt either our language or the nature or value of the suffrage. Often, too, they disguise their foreign nationality by adoption when naturalised, some honourable Saxon family name.

The newly-freed man unives the worst of masters and the "sweated trades" are largely carried on by the "aken immigrants. You have learnt (p. 217) that it a custance of these low pant trides has already called for special legislation. In 1905 Parliament passed the Aliens Act, with a view to restricting the entrance of undesignable pauper immigrants, but the provisions of this statute are not difficult to evade and it is not unlikely that further legislation will be required to prevent this country from becoming the 'dumpin' ground of the outcass of other nations. 'Frighand for the Linglish" must be the rule of action.

A PRICELESS PRIVILEGE

St Paul puded himself upon his Roman enticenship? But we have a vierty greater heritage in our citizenship than had any Roman or Grook. The privilege of British citizenship is beyond all estimate. This hittle book will have failed in its purpose if it has not led you to this conclusion. With heartfult thanks therefore, you should rejorce in the feet that you are British born, and here to such great triditions. It is for you to guard this inheritance reversally, and hand it forward to postenty unit paired. By to yourself as Browning did. Here and

^{# &}amp; F# VII a 18

^{*} Acts xxi. 23 and xxil. 28.

here did England help me; how can I help England? Say!" 1

In the next chapter we will try to point out how each and all of you by loyal and efficient citizenship may help England. To belong to and have a share in the management of the Empire is a glorious right (and each citizen has this), but one also involving a heavy responsibility. The question is sometimes asked, "Of what use is

the Empire to us?" "Should we not be better off without India and the Colonies?" Such questions must be answered by others: "Of what value is any great trust or responsibility?" "Is it better to live a life of selfish ease or one of high and great endeavour?" We believe that we have a great mission to fulfil—to carty justice, knowledge, and peace into the dark places of the earth, and to lead less fortunate races into the ways of self-control, self-reliance, and self-government. "The British Empire," said Lord Rosebery, "is the greatest secular instrument for good."

We have watched British law and liberty and British

institutions implanted in the Colonies, and they have proved eminently successful in promoting the happiness and welfare of the young nations owning allegiance to the British flag. It is because these rising peoples feel that their welfare is due to the possession of free institutions based upon popular sanction, that they remain loyal to the Motherland and to her ancient traditions. The principles of independence, justice, and self-control, which our earliest forefathers brought into England when, a millennium ago, they took possession of the country, are the causes of her present wide development, and of her stability as a world-power. Her children, trained at home in freedom and self-rule, have gone forth into the

world strong and fearless, creating wherever they went a Greater Pritain in which they have reproduced the national institutions of the old country, adapted to a different environment, but resting upon the selfsame solid foundations of the aid liberts.

The question was taked in the early part of this chapter whether the lititish Empire was destined to melt away like its predecessors or whether it contained greater eliments of permanents. If you have studied these come reply to this searching and very difficult question. A Gallic post named Ruthlus came mare to the true answer when he said. Quest remare raines cet quantiqued repair recreases which may be facily translated as follows. The extent of your rule is a less matter than your worthing is to rule.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCLASION AND RESEARCH

1 The Romans boasted that when yer they conquered they established the Pax Romans. Contrast this with the Pax Beitannes.

- 2 The British Lingues has been described as a "base aggregation of autonomous states". If this be so what is it e nature of the Imparial bond? Is it anything mere than a tre of antiment?
- 3 Some perturn of the Empire were obtained by discovery and settlement, some by conquest some by cos our, some by purchase. Give instances of each,
- i Does Newfoundland form part of the Deminion of Canada, or Rhodesia part of the Union of South Africa! If not, can you say why not!
- 5 Discuss the removal of the Indian Capital from Cal-
 - 6 How far should Western ideas of marriage he forced

252 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

upon the people of India who believe in polygamy and in child-marriages ‡

- 7. The people of Natal wish to exclude Hindus. Do you recognise the incongruity of one set of British subjects excluding from their country another set of British subjects?
- 8. How would you provide for representation of the Colonies in an Imperial Parliament of the Empire? How should India be represented? Where should this Parliament meet? Could prominent Colonial Statesmen attend the Parliament of the Empire, and yet manage to lead their parties in the Colonial Parliaments?
- 9. Could or would the British Parliament be controlled in its foreign policy by the Parliament of the Empire?
 - 10. In a London Evening paper of 26th February, 1913, appeared an article under these headlines—"Boon to Aliens." "British Citizenship for £3 a Head," pointing out that the fee payable on naturalisation, formerly £5, had now been reduced to £3. In this connection, discuss whether naturalisation should be made easier and cheaper, or the reverse; also whether an alien should be allowed to adopt an English surname.
 - 11. How should Empire Day be celebrated?
 - 12. How far have we secured an "Imperial Penny Post"?

CHAPTER AVIII

THE COMPLETE CITIZEN

THE YOUNG CITIZEN

Ann how you may ask, can logs or girls beam their work as cutzins? They are too voting to sit on Committees or to enter Conneils or to undertake the daties which only older people with some experience of the world and its

affairs, can properly perform

Quite true But it would be the most erroreous idea
to imagine that citizenship is only for "grown-ups" Let
us see how young people can assist in working for their

country's good nithout for one moment neglecting their

school work, or the duties of the home
Two very simple rules will suffee to guide every
child into the paths of good citizenship. They are
\$\lambda\delta\text{f one can hirt to himself alone}\$

Olive life begins at home and in the school
We will examine these statements.

We will examine meas sciencers.

Have you ever realised that everything you do, every
one of your actions affects rome one else for better or
werso? No one—tre as he will—can escape this universal

law Science tells us that the shifting of the timest public afters the balance of the globe, and, in the same way, every one of your actions—oven the smallest—may

he attended with consequences immersurably great. If once you group this truth, you will realise that every

person in the State—however young, insignificant, or obscure he may be—exercises some influence upon those around him. His life and conduct are, therefore, of importance to his fellow-citizens. Your function may be likened perhaps to that of a cog on one of the wheels of some great piece of mechanism. The finest of watches is useless if even one of the little eogs is missing.

FORMATION OF CHARACTER

If you are well or ill, clean or dirty, brave and truthful or cowardly and false, thrifty or thriftless, it is of consequence to sombody—to your parents, or your relations, or your teachers, or your friends. It is impossible to avoid the law that man cannot live to himself alone. Your life either helps forward, or drags down and injures other lives; and if you have any manliness or womanliness in your character, you will desire to help and assist, rather than to distress and injure other people.

The first steps, therefore, towards good citizenship, are plain to see. They lie in the formation of your character. To be clean, sober, diligent, honest, thrifty, kind, well-mannered, brave, truthful, and self-reliant is not merely to be of good character. Such qualities are beneficial to your family, and family life lies at the root of our national life. The virtues, therefore, that render their possessor a delightful friend, a faithful comrade, a trust-worthy servant, a loyal subject, and a kind master, are advantageous to the State.

We see, then, that civic life begins in the home and in the school—in the formation of character. Hard work at school, and considerate behaviour at home may not seem very high virtues to you, but they are the basis of all good citizenship. The Romans knew this, and you may like to remember that "virtue" is a Latin word, whose meaning is best translated by the Frighth word "manhiress." "Virtue," or manhine-s of character, is the bedress, of all citizenships

Remember that the State is made up of individuals each of whom is a source either of strength or weakness. Each unit that contributes to the national efficiency is a welcome addition to the community whilst even the wildless to develop an average standard of efficiency is a fulfillation to be follows, and very generally a burden to secrety.

Roughly therefore we may class ourselves and every one of our associates either as also ig the "efficients," or among the most of cents, that is among those who tend to increase the common atock of wealth and happaness, or among these who draw upon and decrease it. Ask yourselves to which class you belong

The ails the dishonest the recover, the intemperate, the quarrelectue, the shiftless the spendthrult, and the uncleanly, belong to the latter class. They direct by their conduct and habits from the sum-total of the general welfare, and lining misery and discomfort upon all with whom they come in contact

THE RODY THE TEMPLE OF THE MIND

The foundations of our health are less when we are too young to take any part or interest in the process. The first year of life is the most difficult to survive. In some of our manufacturing towns the death rate a neigh infants is terrible high, one child in two or six daying before it attems the first anniversary of its birthday. It is terential, therefore, for the State to concern itself with

256 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

questions of infant mortality, and with the care of the body. You have learnt that the law now provides medical inspection of school children (see p. 183), and that volun-

tary Care Committees (see p. 189) charge themselves with the oversight of the health of the little ones who appear neglected and underfed. When, however, a child attains to an age when it can begin to think for itself-and you who read these pages have arrived at that stage-there

are many things which it can do to maintain a state of good health. It is scarcely necessary to point out that good health

is the best of all possessions. No one-not even the richest-can be happy without good health. See to it, therefore, that you use your body wisely and reverently. The body is the temple of the mind. Excesses of all

kinds injure the body, and the mind is weakened in consequence. The gluttonous, the intemperate, the excessive smoker, the self-indulgent, in short, all who abuse

their bodily appotites and powers, are equally damaging their mental faculties. Keep your body "fit" therefore

by daily exercise; join heartily in the school games-if your strength permits-and develop your muscles as well as your brain. The world wants both, and there is nothing incompatible between physical prowess and a high place in the class lists. Train yourself so that you gain command over your body, and not your body

over you. . A sound mind in a sound body was recognised by the old Greeks and Romans as a fundamental necessity of good citizenship. By a sound mind is meant a mind well-trained, well-balanced, and well-informed.

SELF-I DUCATION

Do not think that your education is finished when you leave rehool. You will find that it is just beginning, and is never hinshed. In these days of creang schools polytechnics, technical classes, university extrained lectures, free libraries museums justime gallenes, etc., there is no excuse for remaining ill informed or unclimated to the content of the content of

Self-education is the best of all education. In your preparation for the battle of life and for the manifold duties of citizenship arm yourself with sound knowledge The uneducated-those who have never learnt "how to learn' -do not I now what a world of pleasure and profit lies in those wide fields of knowledge open to all who care to wander therein Read all that appertains to your trade or profession Ann at the highest technical efficiency in the work by which you earn your livelihood. But whatever else you read combine with it so ne reading of history History is the only infallible guide to good citizenship. The past expenence of humanity furnishes the best of all clues to future action. Do not begin your study of history with the Norman Conquest, but with unite recent events. Then work brokward to the earlier periods. History is not a dry study, though it is often taught in an uninteresting manner, and school examinations too often make it a more matter of names and dates

History is in reality a long thirdling story which has the superlative ment of being true. You can absorb a great deal of history by reading the Benninscences or Prographies of great men and women whilst much valuable instruction can be obtained from the best historical novels.

258 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

Master one subject thoroughly, so that you can speak upon it with authority. "Know everything of something and something of everything."

HOBBIES

Boys and girls, and "grown-ups" too are all the better if they have a "hobby." It may be music, or sketching, or science, or literature, or it may be carpentry or model-engineering, or again it may be the collecting of stamps or botanical specimens or insects. A hobby isa great resource, and if thoroughly and genuinely studied or practised, it affords a valuable form of self-training. There are many well-known business men who have become, and are looked up to as, high authorities upon geology, entomology, astronomy and other sciences, which they originally took up as hobbies. Others again are fine art connoisseurs, whilst not a few are splendid amateur musicians. In times of great mental stress, or business worry, many a strong intellect has been saved from despair by the possession of some resource in the shape of a "hobby."

" MANNERS MAKYTH MAN"

Cultivate good manners in your relations with other people. It is no sign of manliness or of independence of character to be sharp, curt, or rudely-spoken in your conversation with others. Quite the contrary. It is a sign of ill-breeding, and of a lack of education. When the William of Wykeham founded his college at Winchester more than five hundred years ago, he gave to it the mottowhich stands at the head of this paragraph, "Manners makyth Man"—a motto which is borne to the present.

day upon the cost of arms of this famous school. The pious and guntons heartful founder knew that gentleness, courtesy, and consideration for others, are arrong if a choicest fruits of education, and that these virtues are the distinguishing qualities of a "gentle-man".

Good manners indeed are a truer test of manliness than a low low-slent, and amounth demensor. The man who under strong provocation can keep his manners, restrain his temper, and check his tongue has already conquered a kingdom. He is of finer mettle and is more mandy than he who loses his self-control and gives way to bluster and vitugeration.

Remember this when in after life you are drawn into political or religious controvers. No subjects arouse deeper feelings than questions of politics or religion. Ours is a free country in which every man is entitled to his own opinion, and he is at likerly to urce his views upon others by reasoning and argument. No one is justified, however, in exceeding the limits set by good manners. If cool reasoning cannot turn a man to another way of thinking it is certain that abusive epithets will not do so. There is an old saying "It is cold sted that cuts,"—a maxim which you may recollect with advantage whenever you are about to entir into any controversy.

When dealing with the subject of manners as a necessary part of the equipment of the complete citizen, some reference must be made to the existence of a class of people—generally young and a property of criminal tendencies—who find a vicious pleasure in the wanton distruction of property intended for the use or pleasure of the public. Such area as damaging the trees or flowing plants, or seats, in public parks, throwing broken bottles on the leach, hacking the

cushions in railway carriages; scribbling or scratching initials upon public monuments; defiling empty churches, and many other similar insensate or unclean deeds, betoken a diseased mind. Some form of sharp and salutary discipline should be administered to those who thus grossly abuse property designed for common use and enjoyment.

We should each feel personally responsible for that which belongs to the community or for that which is placed at the disposal of the public for use or enjoyment. It behoves us, therefore, to constitute ourselves guardians of all forms of public property, whether in parks, museums, libraries, picture galleries, churches, or else-

where.

COMPULSORY AND VOLUNTARY DUTIES

If you have carefully read the preceding chapters, you will have learnt that a good citizen must not only know many things about the national institutions and the laws under which he lives, but he must also accept certain responsibilities and perform certain duties for the benefit of the community as a whole. Some of these duties are compulsory, others are voluntary. The law, for instance, compels a man to pay his rates and taxes; to serve on juries; to clothe, educate, and vaccinate his children; to insure his servants; to register the birth and death of any member of his family; to keep his property in a sanitary condition; as well as sundry minor duties which you will discover for yourself when you acquire the full status of citizenship. In all other European countries a man must also undergo a rigorous military training, and qualify himself as an efficient soldier. In addition to these positive duties laid upon

the citizen by the law, he is also forbidden to do certain things, which though not morally wrong are nevertheless contrary to the interests of the people. Thus, for instance, no one may obstruct a highway by throwing down stones briefs or refuse. The line also restrains a mon from carrying on in his house any tri le or business which is a musance to his neighbours. He may not even play a musual instrument lite at night if thereby he hinders the sleep of the people next door. The law, you see endearours to keep sample from behaving in a manner which adversely affects the life safety, health, or comfact of others. The ancient Romans who were great lawgivers, expressed this idea in their legal phrase 'Sio uters tuo ut non ahenum lacdas ' which means " Use what is yours so as not to injure anyone else ' And if you think of it this maxim is embodied in the Golden Rule, the central principle of the Christian religion, "to do unto others as you would that they should do unto you" There is indeed no higher rule of citizenship than this all-embracing command. To be a law abiding person is excellent, but it is one

To be a law abusing person is excellent, but it is one sule only of good citizenship. The Complete Citizen is he who is ready and willing to und-trake some voluntary services for the good of his neighbours, in addition to the compulsory duties enforced by the law, services for which he med expect few or no thanks, and no recompense save in the inward estisfaction of an honourable task faithfully accomplished. Most of you can do something to promote the general good even though you may be very young and still at school.

CITIZENS BUSY, SICK, OR APATHETIC

We must recognise that some people have to work so long and so hard for a living, that they cannot find strength or time for anything else. They are doing their part as citizens in toiling for their own support, and for that of their families. We cannot ask them to add to their arduous labours by engaging in any form of voluntary service.

There are those again who are hindered by sickness or .. disease from undertaking any share of the voluntary duties of citizenship. We should be reminded by their infirmities that much disease is due to damp, dark and insanitary houses, impure water and food, neglect of the elementary principles of health, etc .- all of which causes it will be the care of the citizens of the future to remove . from our midst. But whatever we may do to alleviate the sum-total of human suffering there will always be poverty, disease, and misfortune. There will always, therefore, be scope for charitable work, and room for the display of love and sympathy to those who have fallen by the way. However good and wise our laws may be, they, can never take the place of that divine unselfishness which has been embodied for all time in the parable of the Good Samaritan.

Lastly, there are people too selfish or too idle or indifferent to make any personal effort in the way of social service, even though they have time and means at their disposal. The giving of money is a poor substitute for personal effort. Indeed, in many branches of social work such as attendance on Councils, Boards, Advisory and Care Committees, etc., it is sacrifice of time and thought that is wanted rather than gifts of money. The citizen who could engage in this work but declines because it would interfere with his pleasure or comfort, is not discharging his obligations to society by simply sunding a chique or a postal order for a sum which he may possibly not miss. Remember always that the Complete Citizen must be prepared to render social service in pressin, and not by deputy, otherwise he is shirking his social obligations. Apathy and indifference to the calls of civic duty are inconsistent with good citizenship. Indeed, there can be no sure in hecition of national decay than the again; or indifference of a people to their public interests.

YOUR DEST TO YOUR COUNTRY

Obligations are dolts, and we each over a dobt to our country. This debt we are bound in honour to repar To have been born a British child is a priceless privilege. No other nation confers so rich a heritage upon its children.

You must read in your histories of the long and jounful struggles to secure the spicious freedom which you now enjoy, and which some of you in innorance of its great worth perhaps estrem too lightly Fraction to working according to the dictates of conscience, freedom to speak out one's thoughts upon political and religious platforms; the freedom of the press, the freedom of the ballot-box, freedom to move from town to town, and from England to the Colonics or abread without interference, freedom from a long and ardians military service,—there are only a few of the privileges which many other nations have still to secure for themselves

Then think of the many other burthinghts of every Figlish child—the right to free education, the right of being medically cared for when tee young to understand the importance of sound teeth, elect ejecight, and straight

limbs; the right to wholesome conditions of labour in the factories and mines; the right to be insured in after-years against sickness and accident and (in some trades) against unemployment, and against want in old age. Each decade sees a further addition to our privileges and rights. Advance is slow, but sure. The ideal towards which we should strive is to secure to every honest and faithful worker in the community the right to a reasonable share of leisure, and of the wealth that he helps to produce, and a large share of health and happiness. There should beand if you all combine to work for it, there will be-no possibility in succeeding generations of a useful citizen having to live in degrading poverty. Meanwhile you are in debt to your country for the privileges and for the rights which you already enjoy. See that you discharge that obligation by some form of social service, whereby the lot of others less fortunate may be brightened and bettered.

THRIFT

It is the duty of every citizen to exert himself so as not to become a burden on others. Thrift is a means to this end, and should, therefore, be encouraged. The State offers many inducements to thrift. Through the Post Office a child may begin to save pence, and the Post Office Savings Bank offers a perfectly safe deposit for savings, which can always be withdrawn (at any Post Office in the Kingdom) in time of need. Through the Post Office also, a man may buy an annuity or invest his savings in securities like "Consols," etc., the interestingon which is guaranteed by the State. Thrift should never be allowed to degenerate into miserliness—one of the most deplorable of vices.

WEALTH AND CITIZENSHIP

Some people there are unfortunately, who whilst our scious of noble ends deliberately choose the best aims of life and which every and any form of social service that involves a flathenth or a flathenth. This spend their days in the pursuit of 11 suite. Such editives are far more dangerous to the base than the most fortest most dangerous to the base than the most fortest most dangerous to the base than the most fortest most large on the cuttern of the fourier will certainly have to justife his existence be some form of work that tends to the general good—otherwise he will be held to forfeit the respect and the protects in of the community to whos welfare his life contributes nothing.

The possession of great wealth carries with it great power and therefore great responsibilities. Unless this power is wisely executed and the responsibilities are duly discharged, there is a growing ten lengy to regard the owner of a wast fortune as an enemy of excity. The millionaire with high heals of his stewardship who looks upon his wealth as a trust to be faithfully administered, can be a blessing to the community in which he lives. On the other hand a Greates who misuses his guins in sense-less luxury is a curse to society. He dichases the whole tops of the national life.

It is son etimes imagined by those who have not studied political comount that a rich main is benefiting this community when he keeps door as of certaints and expends extra traint sums in usoless display. People are vent to say that he is circulating money, and thereby helping trade. Actioning is further from the truth. A flow individuals may profit but the rest of society well as a spurious form of helping trade. Thus things may not at first score clear to you.

266 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

They need close study for complete apprehension. Some maxims, however; you can remember, viz. "Want is not cured by Waste"; and that "One Worker is worth many Spendthrifts." The following illustration may assist you to understand the matter.

If a millionaire were to give to every person in London a half-crown, he would be reduced to poverty, and you would find, a few days later, that all the half-crowns were spent, and that no one was any better off. If, however, he had spent the money in building factories, and in establishing a great industrial business employing thousands of people, each of these persons might have been jermanently enabled to earn a good wage, whilst the millionaire would at the same time be none the poorer. In circulating his money in that way he would be conferring real benefit upon the community, whereas in giving it away in charity he would have done no lasting good, but possibly some harm; for indiscriminate charity is the worst form of generosity. It tends to create paupers, rather than a class of steady self-reliant workers.

Ho, only, whether rich or poor, is a good citizen whose life's work is fraught with usefulness to the State. We do not mean by this that all our time and strength should be given to work among the poor and sick, or attendance on Councils and Committees. That would be a very one-sided view of citizenship. There is a vast amount of necessary work to be done in the world. The fields must be ploughed, the harvest gathered, sheep and cattle must be reared, railways must be constructed and worked, houses must be built, cloth must be woven, leather must be tanned, food must be cooked, the home must be tended, and the million wants of civilised life must be met by the organised activity of millions of workers. The humble ploughman who performs his duty efficiently and conducts

humself colorly and honestly, is as good a critical as any in the land. His work is alreadily necessary to so vety, and though he may be a peor and uninstructed person looked down upon by people who do not understand what critizenship in may he is worth now to the community than any idler, however ruth or will-born. He personn'es the dignity of labour, for he is serving only; whilst engaged in 'the duity round, the common task'

Good entrembing does not therefore depend upon the pessession of wealth power or occal position. It is a realter of personal character and worth of faithful fulled rout of data and of enlightened ideals of particular in Liginarias we find the greatest toe of good citizenship, in I liceation the gruitest hope. The use saving of the old track philosophic Diogenes, who lived nearly 2000 years ago, is as true to day as when it was uttered.

"The foundation of every state is the education of its youth."

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEASON

- Discus, the sayings—"The Price of Freedom is French Vigilance," and "Terronal Liberty is founded upon Vorahty and Education."
- 2 "Laberty of Speech," and "Laberty of the Press," are two of the great provileges of British conversing. Dust unjush in this convection between "hibrity" and "hierore".
- 7 "Pove-ty is a remediable evil." He or describe some of the means by which in your opinion poverty might be alleviated or also had.
- 1 It has been proposed by some reformers to p. s. a law enforcing a minimum wage of 30s [s.r. uerk for all unreces, Discuss that proposal (1) as a remedy for poverty, (2) as highly to increase the number of unemployed.

Westminster Abbey just beyond. Nowhere in the world are more noble examples of architecture to be found than in this quarter of London-the capital of the Empire. Of the ancient Abbey and of the Houses of Parliament you; have probably seen many pictures, and you are thus familiar with their appearance even though you may never have travelled to London. But the other handsome and massive buildings are new to you, and you may wonder what purpose they serve, and who are the people that use them. They are the Government Buildings which belong to the nation, that is to you and to me, and to all of us. We ought to take an interest in them because they have been built at the expense of the nation, that is, out of the taxpayers' money. It is within those spacious offices that the actual work of the Government goes on. Hundreds of officials and clerks come there daily to carry out the duties allotted to each. One of the greatest of these buildings is called The Treasury, another the Foreign Office, another the War Office, another the Admiralty, another the Education Office, and so on.

E3

THE CIVIL SERVICE

The officials who carry on the administrative work, and the vast army of clerks constitute what is called the Civil Service. They are chosen with great care, and usually obtain their posts by competition in the "Civil Service Examinations." They receive good pay, and at the end of their period of service (which, as a rule, iteminates at the age of sixty) a pension. Naturally there is a keen competition for these posts, and many people are attracted into the civil service because of the certainty of rotaining their situations so long as they conduct themselves homountly and efficiently. In this

country we have a "permanent" civil service—that is, the civil servants when once appointed are unaffected by any lange of Ministry. The Ministris come and go as parties rise and fall. The civil servants remain. In America civil servants are appointed on political grounds, and are timined out of their offices when a change in the Government takes place. Their system is based upon the principle of the 'spoils to the victors. By us this is deemed not conducted to regular and efficient work, and we have therefore, adopted a system in which merit and efficiency rather than political opinions furnish the grounds for advancement.

QUESTIONS FOI DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

- 1 Differentiate between the use of the word "minister" as a servant of religion and as a servant of the State
- 2 Do you think it will ever be possible to arbitrate upon questions involving the national honour? Give reasons for your mower
- 3 What are the advantages or otherwise of appointing awihans to the posts of I arst Lord of the Admiralty and Minister for Wart
 - 4 What is meant by the term "Cabinet Responsibility"!
- 6 How far is the Cabinet a recognised part of the Con-
- 6 Uses the names of the Ministers at present holding the creat Offices of State mentioned in this chapter
 - 7. Discuss the advantages of a permanent civil service
- 8 Give examples from everyday life of false economy, with a view to proving that what is most efficient is in the long run the clearest